



This is a digital copy of a book that was preserved for generations on library shelves before it was carefully scanned by Google as part of a project to make the world's books discoverable online.

It has survived long enough for the copyright to expire and the book to enter the public domain. A public domain book is one that was never subject to copyright or whose legal copyright term has expired. Whether a book is in the public domain may vary country to country. Public domain books are our gateways to the past, representing a wealth of history, culture and knowledge that's often difficult to discover.

Marks, notations and other marginalia present in the original volume will appear in this file - a reminder of this book's long journey from the publisher to a library and finally to you.

Usage guidelines

Google is proud to partner with libraries to digitize public domain materials and make them widely accessible. Public domain books belong to the public and we are merely their custodians. Nevertheless, this work is expensive, so in order to keep providing this resource, we have taken steps to prevent abuse by commercial parties, including placing technical restrictions on automated querying.

We also ask that you:

- + *Make non-commercial use of the files* We designed Google Book Search for use by individuals, and we request that you use these files for personal, non-commercial purposes.
- + *Refrain from automated querying* Do not send automated queries of any sort to Google's system: If you are conducting research on machine translation, optical character recognition or other areas where access to a large amount of text is helpful, please contact us. We encourage the use of public domain materials for these purposes and may be able to help.
- + *Maintain attribution* The Google "watermark" you see on each file is essential for informing people about this project and helping them find additional materials through Google Book Search. Please do not remove it.
- + *Keep it legal* Whatever your use, remember that you are responsible for ensuring that what you are doing is legal. Do not assume that just because we believe a book is in the public domain for users in the United States, that the work is also in the public domain for users in other countries. Whether a book is still in copyright varies from country to country, and we can't offer guidance on whether any specific use of any specific book is allowed. Please do not assume that a book's appearance in Google Book Search means it can be used in any manner anywhere in the world. Copyright infringement liability can be quite severe.

About Google Book Search

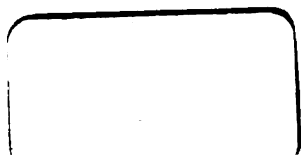
Google's mission is to organize the world's information and to make it universally accessible and useful. Google Book Search helps readers discover the world's books while helping authors and publishers reach new audiences. You can search through the full text of this book on the web at <http://books.google.com/>

465
.9

11465.49 (2)



**HARVARD
COLLEGE
LIBRARY**



943
DO NOT / run
right side

DE
JURE MAIESTATIS
OR
POLITICAL TREATISE
OF
GOVERNMENT

(1628—30)

AND

[THE LETTER-BOOK]

OF

SIR JOHN ELIOT

(1625—1632)

NOW FOR THE FIRST TIME PRINTED: FROM THE
AUTHOR'S AND OTHER MSS. AT PORT ELIOT.

Edited, with Introduction, Fac-similes and Notes, etc.

BY THE

REV. ALEXANDER B. GROSART, LL.D., F.S.A.,

ST. GEORGE'S, BLACKBURN, LANCASHIRE.

IN TWO VOLUMES. "2"

VOL. II.

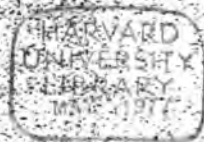
NAMES AND PREFATORY NOTE.—THE LETTER-BOOK OF SIR JOHN
ELIOT.—NOTES.

PRINTED FOR EARL ST. GERMAN'S AND
PRIVATE CIRCULATION ONLY.

1882.

8810
57

14465.49 (2)



342,42
EL 45
V. 2

CHISWICK PRESS :- C. WHITTINGHAM AND CO., TOOKS COURT,
CHANCERY LANE.

Digitized by Google

UNIVERSITY
OF
PENNSYLVANIA

UNIVERSITY

I have been his Mth hath given me special command
 from his own mouth that I should signify his
 pleasure unto you, that you should not get out of town
 till you have first gotten leave with me & given me
 my instructions in a business concerning his father.
 that you may not ~~forget~~ encounter the demands
 of conversation & be that then as is I tell you how
 much that I shall not desire of you long & for
 our better dispatch I wish ~~it~~ you would agree to
 me all together with me to my chamber in the
 under Stairs on Monday morning by seven a
 clock, when I shall acquaint you with the matter
 further pleasure
 y. 1626.

To his worthy friends

- St J. Diggs
- St Tho. Hobby
- St Tho. Lake
- St Jo. Eliot
- St Walter Earle
- Mr Chr. Waudifford

of seven to, friends

- L. Hoath
- Mr. Emmer
- Mr. Blawie
- Mr. Diden
- Mr. Herbert
- Mr. White
- Mr. Shurland

312.42

E145

v.2



NAMES OF THE LETTER-WRITERS AND PERSONS WRITTEN TO.

(Alphabetically arranged.)

Armyne, Sir William, 209, 210.

Ayscough, Sir Edward, 223.

Cary, Dr. Valentine = Bishop of Exeter, 3.

Corbet, Mrs., 44, 130, 206.

Cotton, Sir Robert, 29, 35.

Courtney, Sir William, 221, 224.

Digges, Sir Dudley, 49.

Eliot, Sir John, 3, 8, 10, 16, 20, 29, 30, 32, 33, 35, 43,

44, 47, 50, 52, 55, 62, 64, 65, 67, 74, 78, 82, 87, 88,

89, 96, 99, 101, 102, 105, 107, 108, 109, 110, 112, 113,

118, 120, 121, 124, 126, 128, 129, 130, 132, 133, 134,

136, 137 (two), 139, 142, 146, 147 (two), 148, 150,

151, 152, 153, 154, 155, 156, 160, 161, 164, 165, 166,

169, 176, 177, 180, 181, 182, 184, 188, 189, 190, 192,

195, 196, 200, 206, 210, 211, 217, 220, 223, 226, 227,

229.

5-18-09 Richardson (V.2) flypapered

Rep.

Y.30 Ap. 25-1.30

262258

Digitized by Google

Grenville, Sir Beville, 46, 47, 73, 74, 128, 154, 166, 182,
192, 204, 218, 220.

Godfrey, Capt., 30, 38, 77, 125, 134, 142, 153, 175, 177,
195, 203.

Hall, Bishop (Joseph), 39.

Hampden, John, 75, 78, 84, 112, 121, 129, 136, 151,
152, 156, 158, 161, 167, 169, 174, 178, 184, 187, 196,
201, 211, 227, 229.

Harwood, Sir Edward, 165.

Heath, Sir Robert, 6, 9.

James, Richard, B.D., 66, 137, 215.

Knightley, Richard, 52, 62, 79, 87, 110, 113, 146, 176,
189, 202, 206, 213, 224, 226.

Knightley, Thomas, 105, 164, 170, 181.

Kyrton, Edward, M.P., 85, 88, 97, 99.

Langworthy, Mrs., 118.

Luke, Sir Oliver, 11, 81, 82, 96, 117, 120, 124, 126, 132,
133, 137, 148, 150, 155, 160, 186, 197, 199, 200, 208,
212, 214, 217, 226.

Luke, Lady, 116.

Marten, Sir Henry, 25, 147.

Moyle, John, 109, 143, 147.

S. W., 172.

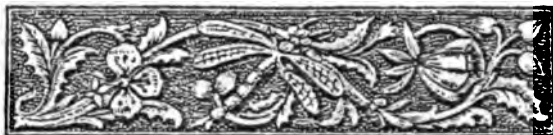
Selden, John, 27, 101, 222.

Smithe, M., 65.

Treife, Mr., 67.

Valentine, Benj., 23, 75.

Waller, Sir Henry, 14, 18, 22.



PREFATORY NOTE.

WHAT I have named 'The Letter-Book of Sir John Eliot' forms a fine (blank) interleaved folio volume preserved at Port Eliot. It makes one of the Series arranged and bound under the supervision of FORSTER. On a fly-leaf there is pasted on a little oval piece of red morocco, bearing the initials J — (Sir) John Eliot—though how the initials should have been thus placed does not appear—and beneath a fragment of the back-lettering of the MS. thus—

L[et]ter[s]

[o]f

[Sir] John

Eliot

1628

In so far as SIR JOHN ELIOT's own letters are concerned, they are his own copies, evidently written on separate sheets either before or after the letters themselves, as sent. One little circumstance makes me conclude that in the present

volume we have only portions of the original collection, viz., that the first letter of Sir Oliver Luke (page 11) is paged (41). Moreover, in succession to it, the letters are paged (13) to (22). Then in succession to them, come pages 1 to 11, with 8 and 9 irregularly placed. Thereafter the pagination, though on a whole regular, is intermixed, and numbered (35) to (49), and then intermixed more than ever, and so onward. The explanation seems to be that Forster took the original MSS. to pieces, and arranged hastily, and not very intelligently, according to what he took to be the chronology. As explained in the places, several documents are also irregularly inserted. The entire volume as it now stands is paged (in pencil) from 1 to 213 folios (not pages, as taking in only one side of the leaf).

Forster has prefixed this memorandum:—"In consulting this Correspondence, the Reader will always keep in mind, that the year begins invariably on the 25th of March; from the 1st of January to the 24th of March in each year, as we should now count, belonging, as the men of Eliot's time counted, to the year preceding. Thus the 1st of January, 1626, in this volume, means what we should call 1627."

For myself I feel (almost) proud (in a good sense) to have been enabled not only *for the first time* to print the great treatise *De Jure Majestatis*, but likewise to furnish this Letter-Book in integrity. It is a very much more weighty and interesting addition to the former than anticipated. The Letters of Sir John Eliot himself over and over bring a lump into the throat and fiery tears into the eyes, espe-

cially those to his Sons and towards the close. Than these, for tranquil, God-upheld submissiveness and meekness, I know nothing comparable with them in our language. On the other hand, the wrong done so great and good a man in the accompanying meanness and shrewish venomousness of the King's personal oversight of his imprisonment, would be incredible, but for the pathetic records and witness of these old Letters. Many of the Letters to Sir John Eliot here given, present some of his (historical) contemporaries in most favourable lights. The Hampden and Grenville, Luke and Godfrey letters, will abundantly reward reading and re-reading. They all testify to the *hold* the illustrious Prisoner had from first to last of the heads and hearts of the foremost men of his age.

I have thought it well to reproduce in fac-simile (*a*) the famous (or infamous) Questions of Heath (facing title-page of this vol.), and (*b*) the autographs of all the leading Letter-Writers—most not before done. Also (*c*) the close of Eliot's last letter.

ALEXANDER B. GROSART.

THE
LETTER-BOOK
OF
SIR JOHN ELIOT.
1625-1632.

II.

B

NOTE.

See INTRODUCTION to the present volumes (V. and VI. of the Series), prefixed to Vol. I., for account of the MS. volume from whence the whole of this CORRESPONDENCE has been drawn. To each letter—wherever needed—brief explanations or illustrations have been given.

A. B. G.



THE LETTER-BOOK OF SIR JOHN ELIOT.

I. SIR JOHN ELIOT TO THE LORD BISHOP OF EXETER.

(Endorsed '24th October 1625. To my Lo. Bp. of Exon.')



OUR first letter is to the then (1625) bishop of Exeter (Dr. Valentine Cary),—the immediate predecessor of the more famous Hall,—formerly Dean of St. Paul's; he was appointed Bp. of Exeter in 1621. The letter is dated from 'Cuttenebeke' (*i.e.* Cudenbeak), which was a manor long held on lease by the family under the Bp. of Exeter, whose country seat had formerly been there, in a mansion afterwards occupied as a jointure-house by the Eliots. "Eliot," says Foster, "was on the kindest terms with both [Cary and Hall], for both were wise and moderate men; and the present seems not to have been the only instance in which Cary had assisted him to make proper as well as popular provision for the spiritual wants of those around him" (l. 463). I have been unable to discover after considerable research, whether or no good 'Mr. Paige' was appointed to the humble 'living.' Most probably he was, and so Eliot and his parishioners alike relieved of the 'fear' of "having to listen to any other than pure doctrine; attached to the church by bonds

which have not yet been rudely broken; and ready with such zeal and service voluntarily to raise her poorer stipends [so] as to make them more worthy the acceptance of a scholar" (*ib.* 463).

My Lo.

as I have heertofore made manie trialls of y^r favor, I am againe¹ encourag'd by those effects, wherein I have beene formerlie soe much y^r debtor, to entreat y^r furtheranc & help to the bearer Mr. Paige, & in him, to me, & the rest of my parish'ners, who, vpon the hope, & knowledge, of his goodness, & sufficiencie, desire to settle him heer amongst vs, as our Minister in the roome of Mr. Dix, now plac't elswher, and willing at our instanc to leave this cure to him. the stipend belonging to it is small, & not worthie of a scholler or able to maintaine him wthout helps, w^{ch} have heertofore beene added by some perticulars,² and I beleeeve, wilbe still to a man of their affection & choise. The nomination, I thinke, is properlie in the Deane & Cannons of Windsor; the Admission wholie in y^r Lo^{ps}; the recommendation indifferent³ to all; wherein, as I know nothing more powerfull, nothing I conceave more fitt, than y^r Lo^{ps} breath to move it, that the whole worke maie beare the character of y^r favor. the last election was soe guided by y^r predecessor, & wth his letters, the nomination being obtain'd from the House, a recommendation

¹ 'now,' written and erased.

² = *individuals*, as we should say, annotates Forster, but query other perquisites?

³ = without prejudice.

P. 5.

[Signature]

P. 14.

W. Luke

P. 16.

George Waller

P. 25.

Ben. Calverton

P. 27.

Henry St. John

P. 29

J. Sedden

P. 38.

Richard

P. 39.

Thos. Gifford

P. 43.

Robt. Eden

P.

Brevill Gt

Dudley

P.

Rich: I

[Signature]

P. 8

F. de V. J

P. 145

go: phyllis

P. 210

Maryne

CLOSE OF SIR JOHN ELIOT'S LAST LETTER.

from

all communicable her right, this as I have
 at Oxford I could not but impart with
 friends, long I have moved by the great
 relation of yr letters, it always have the
 re of fresh intelligence, and are a pleasure
 in that is true

J. E.

tr 29
 1632

came to me in the behalf of the man preferd; vpon w^{ch} I endeavored, as I shall in all y^r Lo^{ps} commands, to give satisfaction of my service. The like furtheranc I desire y^r Lo^p wilbe pleas'd to affoord now, in writing a few words for ⁴ this bearer to the Deane, to draw from him ⁵ the nomination, & Letters to their farmer of the impropriation heer, for ⁶ paiment of the stipend vnto him. I doubt not but his abilities will render him to your iudgment fitt, & his carriage secure me of that fear which/ I open'd to y^r Lo^p of some others, wherin I shalbe happie of so good a prevention, & esteeme it a speciall honor to ⁷ be effected by y^r means. I am sorie y^r Lo^p has neighbor w^{ch} soe manie dangers, & that the poore cottage w^{ch} I tenderd to y^r vse, was not fitt to receave you. I should have beene glad of the opportunitie of some neerness to y^r Lo^p, wher my attendanc might have had a safe recourse. I have not beene wantinge in desircs, nor ever shall in readiness to appeer & bee, ⁸ w^{ch} now onlie my wishes haue supplied: but as ther is occasion or command, I shall alwaies be exprest

Y^r Lo^{ps} most affectionat⁹ Servant

J. ELIOT.

Cuttenbeake 24^o

Octobris 1625.

⁴ 'them,' written and erased.

⁵ 'the,' same.

⁶ This sentence 'I have . . . bee,' semi-erased.

⁷ 'affectionat,' same.

2. SIR ROBERT HEATH 'FOR 'THE KING,' ON THE IMPEACHMENT OF BUCKINGHAM.

(Fac-simile prefixed to title-page of this volume.)

Very great is the contrast between the subject of the first Letter and the next in succession. In the former we are among the home-scenes and lowly parishioners of Cudenbeak, in this at a bound we are ushered into the centre of stupendous events. The 'Remonstrance' of the Commons, whereby it was petitioned for "the removal of that great person the Duke of Buckingham from access to the King," in a few days would be in the hands of the people. "It would tell them why the King so rudely had again dismissed their representatives. They would learn from it all about the impeachment of the duke, the grave charges preferred against him, and how the inquiry demanded into their truth or falsehood had been quashed by an abrupt dissolution. On the face of it there was an ill look; and uncontradicted it might have evil consequence. Might it not be well, some one seems to have whispered to the King, to make a show of *not* screening the favourite, and of saving this dissolution from the slander of having been a mere device to save him? The suggestion was caught at eagerly, and some remarkable unpublished papers at Port Eliot reveal what followed. On the morning of Saturday the 17th of June, the day but one after the dissolution, Eliot, Digges, Hobby, Lake, Erie, Wandesforde, Herbert, Whitby, Sherland, Pym, Glanville, and Selden, the secret committee of twelve to whom had been referred the final charges in the impeachment [of Buckingham], received an urgent note from his majesty's attorney-general" (i. 577-8). The present letter holds so momentous a historical place not only in the life of Sir John Eliot but of England, that I have deemed it expedient to furnish (*ut supra*) a careful fac-simile of it. See answer of Eliot in next.

GENTLEMEN his Ma^{ty} hath given me special command^t from his owne mouth that I should signifie his

pleasure vnto y^a; that ye should not goe out of towne till ye have first¹ beene wth me & given me some instructions in a busines concerninge his service. & that ye may not² misconter the errand or conceive it to be other then it is I lett ye know thus much that I shall not deteyne y^a long. & for your better dispatch I wishe ye³ would agree to come all together vnto me to my chamber in the Inner Temple, on muneday morninge by seven a clocke; when I shall acquaint y^a wth his Ma^{ties} further pleasure;

Y^r verie lo^s frinde

RO: HEATH.

17 Junij. 1626.

To his worthie frindes

S^r D. Diggs

S^r Tho : Hobby

S^r Tho : Lake

S^r Jo : Eliot.

S^r Walter Earle.

M^r Chr : Wandefforde.

M^r Pimme

M^r Glanville

M^r Selden

M^r Herbert

M^r Whitby

M^r Sherland

¹ 'geven,' follows this, but is erased.

² 'it,' same.

³ 'mistake,' same.

3. SIR JOHN ELIOT 'FOR THE TWELVE' IN ANSWER TO SIR ROBERT HEATH.

(On *verse* of Heath's letter.)

"On leaving Heath's chambers the rest had referred it to Eliot to word the decision which ~~he~~ doubtless had most earnestly counselled."
.... "Out of parliament we have no knowledge of the business we transacted there, and to any questions involving our conduct therein, we have no answer to make to you. That in substance was Eliot's answer to the requirement of the King. It was the rule from which he never swerved, and for which, when the majority of those who with him now signed the letter had deserted it, he laid down his liberty and life." (Forster, as before, i. 579.)

Sr wheras this morning when we attended y^a vpon a command^t from his Ma^{ty} signified by y^r self y^a gaue vs intimation of a purpose in his Ma^{ty} to have a proceeding in the Starchamber against the D. of Buckingham vpon such matters as he stood latelie charged wth in Parlam^t, & to that end required to be instructed what proofes we had to mayntayne the severall charges p^rferred from the Com^{ons} & the Lords against the said D. Wee according to y^r advise have considered thereof together & entreat y^a to take knowledg that what soever was done by vs in that business was done by the command of the house of Commons & by their directions some proofes were delivered to the Lords wth the charges but what other proofs the house would have used, according to the libertie¹ reserved to² themselves

¹ 'determined' written and erased.

² 'by' same.

either for the mayntenanc of their charge, or vpon their replie, we neither know, nor can vndertake to informe.

4. QUESTIONS FOR 'THE KING' BY SIR ROBERT HEATH, AND SIR JOHN ELIOT'S ANSWERE.

(Endorsed '*certaine passages w^{ch} ye K^e Attorney vpon y^e end of y^e pt part.*'))

The King refused to take the answer, and ordered Eliot, on the following day, to be specially examined apart from the rest; but "Mr. Attorney's questions and Sir John Eliot's answeare," also preserved among the MSS. at Port Eliot, yielded no better satisfaction. He was pressed closely on the point of witnesses and his own belief in regard to proofs; but he gave only the one reply, diversely shaped but in substance unvarying. "I had therein no other interest or employment but as by the general command, and for the service of the house in the late dissolved parliament." "I retained, but for that service, no other use or memorie." "I have some general notions, but not such particular knowledge as I can conceave to be any way usefull unto you." "My first knowledge and intelligence hapninge in parliament, after discharge of mine owne particular duties to the house I remitted to that againe wholie the memorie and consideration thereof." (Forster, i. 580.) The Biographer continues:—"Baffled thus completely in that which would have given some show of authority to the artifice proposed, Charles had no alternative but to order an information in the star chamber to be supported by proofs of his own. To this sham proceeding the duke put in a sham answer; some witnesses were put through a sham examination as to the potion and plaister in the old King's illness; and then the thing dropped out of sight. Not so the impotent rage of Charles. Bristol was sent to the Tower; Arundel was placed under restraint in his own house; a counter-declaration was issued to

II.

C

the remonstrance; the counter-declaration failing to find attention, the remonstrance was ordered to be burnt; and the unhappy King proceeded to try the effect of those 'new counsels' which he and his servants had so often threatened" (*ibid.*).

Mr. Attorneys questions.

1. In the charge w^{ch} was deliverd by the Co^mons house to ye LL. in the last parliam^t dissolved the 15th of June against the Duke of Buckingham w^{ch} did consist of many perticulars, whoe were produc'd or offerd as witnesses to prove the severall parts of that charge to your knowledge or best remembrance? deliver the names of them, as alsoe what other prooffe was offerd to any of those perticulars, to the end that I may send for those witnesses, or send for those other proofes for my better instructions.

2. Whether doe you your selfe of your owne knowledge knowe any thinge w^{ch} may be vsefull vnto mee as you beleave in provinge any part of those charges & to w^{ch} of them.

S^r John Eliot's answeare.

M^r ATTURNEY

ffor the charge exhibited against the D. of Buckingham to the LL. by the Co^mons in the late dissolved parliam^t or for any parts thereof, what profes or witnesses were produc't or offerd to maintaine the same, besides such as were mentioned in the sayd charge, or deliver'd to those gentlemen, whoe were employd in the openinge of the severall parts thereof before the LL., I doe not remem-

ber and of those I onlie haue some generall notions but not such perticular knowledges as I can conceave to be any way vsefull vnto you for the provinge of the sayd Charge, or any part thereof. for as in the deliveringe of the sayd charge to the LL. any labor was not vsed vpon any of the perticular parts of the charge, nor had I therein at any other time, other interest or imployment, but as by the generall Command & for the service of the house, & at such times only as the parts thereof were in present agitation, soe of things hapininge soe diverslie both in time & order I retaynd noe other vse or memorie but for the present service, keeping therof neither bookes nor papers, wherein my first knowledge & intelligences hapeninge in parliam^t after discharge of mine owne perticular duties to the house I remitted to that againe wholie the memorie & consideraçon thereof.

5. SIR OLIVER LUKE TO SIR JOHN ELIOT (1628/9).

Sir John Eliot is down at Port Eliot. One of his "Four staunch friends," Sir Oliver Luke, writes to send him 'news' that were in the air—alas! Pleasures of Hope that melted into Pleasures of Imagination. (See Forster (as before) Book x. 332-36.) Luke's handwriting is villainous, and only to be guessed at in certain words.

Noble freende, if I me curyouse in seekeing oppourtynytie to present my beste wyshe, you will I doubt not interprett it, (as I accountt it) the leaste duty of that love w^h ever in profession hathe, and practyse shall, render me

yours. the dystaunce that hathe thus devyded us, will I hope shortly be contracted to a nearer conversation, when I assure myselfe we shall meete wthout the leeste chaunge. in meane tyme accountt it some happynes that you are so farr from this place, where you can but heare that w^{ch} we beholde, fayre profefsions wth unaunswerable actions; To wryght what hathe beene done here in our courtes of Justyce, were but to wearye you w^h that w^{ch} I assure my selfe you have herd from many freendes, yett I canot ommytt the happye newes of this week, wherin it hathe pleased his Ma^{ty} ¹ to his whole Counsayle to delyver, that his resolution was to goe that waye in his governementt that myght suyte best w^h his own honor and the safty and prosperytye of his kyngedome, and requyred them after this his declaration theye should apply themselves to advyse, and to make inquisition after all wayes & meanes that myght tende thereunto² and sayd further he did not thi[nk] to humor or prepare a Parlyament, but in discharge of that obligation that laye uppon him, and to this purpose there is a Commyttee chosen of the Lo: to prepare for the better informinge his Ma^{ty} & thus you see you muste come upp w^h a resolution to receive, not to seek grace. there is also certaynly expected (speedily) something to be done in matter of relygion³ for⁴ discountenancinge bothe the Popyshe and Armyndan partye. here is also a generall restoration of all the refractaryes as they tearmed them, to there auntyentt

¹ "in Counsayle," erased.

² a word obliterated.

³ "that" erased.

⁴ "the," erased.

employments in Commyssion, only I heare yourself and some suche are not graced wth these spangella. / Nowe I shalbe bold to trouble you wth somethinge concerninge my own partyculars. I doubt not but you have harde of the dangers I have beene in by reason of some engagements concerninge the L: Lambertt: whereas this last sumer there was a composition perfected betweene us, and a sume of moneye promysed by him to be payd longe before this, wherof he was hopefull to be supplied from the L: Roberttes, therefore desyred a lytell lybertye to make tryall of him. to wth (for his owne good) there was a consentt, but in steede of recevinge the summ of money there is only receved longe letters, hence farr bothe by meselfe and all his frendes his Lo. hath beene pressed^a to take him so farr to his consideration as to helpe him in his distress, all wth hath beene done (as he wryghtes) wth the best arte that ether he or his frendes (naminge m^r Corryton for one) could devyse, usinge their intercession [&] witnesse, all wth proved so farr to his disadvantage as that in stead of the supply he expected thereby he only receves refusalls, and so deepens dislykes, that his L: utterly forsakes him and takes from him the helpes he had in these poore vyctualls he had for himself and famyly heretofore: my request to you is, that you will please to make inquisition whether he hethedone this or not, and whether the success be suche as he relates. M^r Corrynton I knowe can enforme you, therefore I praye you be secrett and seryous in your enquiry,

^a "the L:," erased.

and advyse and dyrectt me, for I assure you I am in great daunger to suffer much by him Thus bold I am to trouble you wth my own particulars but the assurance I have of our mutuall interests makes me confydentt that you will think all thinges easye that you doe for

Your affectionatt freend
and servauntt

OL: LUKE.

6. SIR HENRY WALLER TO SIR JOHN ELIOT:
August 5th, 1628.

"Portsmouth was then the scene of busy preparation for the new naval expedition to decide the fate of Rochelle. Stung by Eliot's late reproaches, and perhaps willing to escape for a time the unpopularity that dogged him in London, the duke [of Buckingham] was resolved again to command in person, and resisting the advice of his flatterers, had gone to join the fleet: That was early in August; and the same post-messenger who carried the news to Eliot might have been the bearer also of a letter which concerned the member for Cornwall yet more nearly, which bore the date the fifth of that month, and forms now a curious little episode in his personal history.

The "curious little episode" told in full by the Biographer (ii. 339 onward and *passim*) was the suggestion of a second wife for Sir John Eliot in his widowerhood, "supposing it pleased God an opportunity might be offered there in London that a widow could be found out, who, as well for person and parts as estate, might be thought to be a fit wife for a gentleman of worth and quality, whether Eliot would hearken and incline this way."

The writer was that Captain Henry Waller, one of the members.

for the city of London, known to us by sympathy with Eliot, and admiration of his conduct in parliament." (Forster, as before, ii. 338-9).

RIGHT NOBLE

S^r yo^r greate love shewed to mee soe vnworthy hath occasioned this boldnes in mee at this time to sallute you wth a word o^r twoe/ In the first place Expressinge my sorrowe fo^r the occasioⁿ of yo^r so soddeyne retvrne into the country beinge the losse of soe worthy & vertuous a ladye, w^{ch} is one of the greatest temporall Crosses that can befall any man, butt god is most wise in all his doeinges & knowes what is best for his & therefore wee must all submitt to his will & nott accompt that loss to vs w^{ch} is gayne to him, especially considering that If hee take awaye one blessinge hee knowes howe to svpply his that rest vppon him wth another. I knowe it cannott butt be tedious & sollicitary fo^r you haveing had soe loving & comfortable a companyon nowe to bee allone & the best office frendes can doe is to thinke howe such a losse may bee repaired w^{ch} is that makes mee to note this questiō whether if so it please god an opportvnity should bee offred here in London that a widdowe maye bee found out that both fo^r pson & ptes & estate maye bee thought to bee a fitt wife fo^r a gentleman of worth & quallitye, you would hearken o^r encline this weye. this I am bold to doe the rather fo^r that I doe knowe a widdowe whose husband dyed moch about the time yo^r ladye did & shee is such a one as noe exception can be taken at & is alreadye sollicitied by men of great birth & worth, butt as yett shee is free & doeth entend to

keepe soe yett & I have some acquaintance wth a neere frend of hers whose advise shee resolves to take in that weye & as from myselfe I did mentiō yo^r name & he gave mee a very modest & good Answer. wee entred into noe pticulers, onely hee asked mee of yo^r meanes & Children wth I could nott fully resolve him. hee is one that knowes you nott butt honers yo^r name. thus farr I have gone of my selfe, wherein If I have erred it is my love & zeale to doe you service hath caryed mee & to that I hope you will Impute it howsoever you doe take the motion & thus craveinge pdon fo^r my boldnes wth my humble service reebred in trust I rest

Yo^r wo^{rsh} ever readye to serve you

HENRYE WALLER.

Londō August 5th

1628.

I desire to bee reebred to my worthy frend m^r Corriton.

7. SIR JOHN ELIOT TO SIR HENRY WALLER: August
11, 1628.

The Reader will turn to Forster (ii. 339 onward) for the sequel of above proposition. Meantime here is the answer, which followed speedily.

S^r if anything could be added to the former obligation w^{ch} I had vnto y^r worth & goodness, the expression of y^r Letter (rendering soe large a testimony of Love as can neither be fully requited or acknowledged) would give it :



VII. JAMES, 1ST EARL STANHOPE

Sir God

wherein, as on all my sorrowes & disasters (for I thanke god I have had variety of both, & yet I hope not wthout favor from above) a speciall consolation has beene in the affection & assurance of my frends, of w^{ch} y^r comes now soe freely & vnmeritted, as it laies a debt vpon me beyond the proportion of all others answearable to the intent it carries, the reparation of a losse never before equalld. What reterne to make y^r in correspondence of this, I know not, & in the consideration I confess, my doubts are represented as I cannot easily resolve. Vpon the late sad change I found in my poore family, my desires had now wthdrawne me from¹ all popular cares & troubles & putt me into a course of privacie & quiett, to w^{ch} I was re-tird. the condition I now bear is soe obnoxious to the displeasure of the time, that I fear by reflection it may cast that darkness vpon others & soe my Love be ternd to miserie, who would not willingly give it to that end. if I should be a means to eclips that virtue w^{ch} I have in admiration, or by the obliquitie of my ffortune deduce a p^rudice to goodness, it would infuse a greife into me more then all the former, & for soe ill an office to my frende, I should even terme enemie to my self. Those things I must leave to be determined by y^r wisdome what operation they should have. the overture y^r make is an argument of such favor and respect, as I cannot repose my self more confidently then in y^r, from whom as I have had the intimation I shall likewise crave the direction & advise,

¹ "the," erased.

by w^{ch}, being more perticularly enlightend I shall guide
my self w^{ch} all due observation to y^r honor; for w^{ch} I
will ever rest in like affection to y^r good, ready on all
occasions to expose myselfe.

Y^r true frend

J. E.

Porteliot
xj Aug. 1628.
to ¹ Mr. Waller.

8. SIR HENRY WALLER TO SIR JOHN ELIOT:
AUGUST 27^o. 1628.

Further information on 'the widow.'

Noble S^r

I received yo^r letter wherein is expressed soe mvch
love & respect as can neither be meritted no^r in the least
measure requited by any thinge I am able to doe. I was
never skoller no^r courtier & therefore can neither vse
eliloquence no^r complement, butt my tongue & pen are butt
the expressors of my heart. I mvst confesse by hearinge
of yo^r worth & vertues I did hono^r your name butt
seeinge them soe cleerely & faithfully expressed in the
service of the Chvrch & Comenwealth it Ingaged mee to
bende my stvdyes & endeavors to doe you service & I

¹ "Capt," erased.

shall accompt it a great happines to bee acknowledged by such [a] patryotte. As touching the buisines formerly propounded in generall I shall nowe geve a more pticuler rellatiō: the gentlewomā I mentioned is a marchants widow: her hvsband was an Aldermans sonne in London. hee dyed about the time yo^r worthy ladye dyed. shee is neere about 30 years of adge & fo^r pson & ptes fitt fo^r a gentleman of worth. shee hath butt one child wth is a sonn & her ward. Her hvsband left to her & her child an estate of 30000^l o^r neere vppon & one halfe at the least to her selfe. shee hath twoe kinsmen (the one a marchant in London the other a gentleman in Staffordshire a member of o^r house) vppon whose advise shee doeth rellye. I have spoken wth him [in] London & hee doeth well approve of the motion, & wisheth it were in his power to fvrther it butt hee tells mee shee was soe sollicitd heere in London that shee is gone into Glocestershire & is to goe shortly into Staffordshire to her kinsmans, one Mr. Mathewe Craddocke, to free her selfe from suitors & howe shee maye bee prevayled wth there hee doeth nott knowe butt shee told him at her goeing that shee meant to retvrne about the begiining of the terme as free as shee went. amongst others o^r worthy recorder is a very earnest suitor. hee dmanded 2 questions of mee wth I could nott Answer. the one was of yo^r meanes & the other howe many Children you hadd & sayd wth all that her desire was to match where was noe children, butt womens ressollutions are nott allwayes Constant. I have written likewise vnto Mr. Craddocke in the Countrey to desire his furtherance & to move it to

her, & as I shall heare from him soe I shall geve you fvrtther Intelligence. In these thinges the meanes being vsed the processe mvst bee left to him whoe disposeth of all thinges fo' the best to his : there shalbe noe endeavo' wantinge in mee & I shall thincke it the best actiō I did this 7 yeare If I might bee an Instrymēt to effect it. I hope nowe wee shall meete agayne at the time prefixed (if nott before vppon this occasion) The onely obstacle beinge nowe removed of w^{ch} I doubt nott butt you have heard together wth the mañer thereof w^{ch} will pduce some alteratiō. god graunt fo' the best : thus fearinge tediousnes wth my best observance & affection to yo' worth & goodnes I shall ever rest

Yo' poore yett trve freind readye to serve you

HENRYE WALLER.

London, August 27th, 1628.

9. SIR JOHN ELIOT TO SIR HENRY WALLER : 15
October, 1628.

'Riding' toward London, he met with tidings of 'adjournment of the parliament,' and so does not go to the capital :—

S^a

I was thus farr advanc't in my iorney towards yo^r where I mett wth the pclamation for the adiernement of the parliament, w^{ch} has againe return'd mee for a while to the quiett & retirement of the Cuntry. this messenger

my servante cominge vp to followe some business of the terme, I could not wthout some addresse to yo^a geve him place soe neere yo^r, yo^r respecte & worth pleadinge soe much meritt, that it were an ingratitude not to acknowledge the favo^r I have receav'd, as it is an obligation of much debte not to have deserv'd it. I have formerlie given my selfe whollie to yo^r will, soe that if there be anie thinge wherein I maie serve yo^a, it muste be your fault not to command your owne. ffor the proposition w^{ch} yo^a made, as I entertain'd it onelie at firste, for beinge yo^r: Soe I still resente it accordinge to the proportion given by yo^a whoe in that shalbe the loadstone by w^{ch} my course shalbe directed. if yo^a intend it further and want anie pticulere from mee this bearer will geve yo^a satisfaction, whome I have instructed to attend yo^a & to assure yo^a that this testimonie of yo^r love has soe far ingag'd mee as I am expos'd in all readines to yo^r desires, and should be happie to receive an occasion to be tryed

Yo^r most faithfull serv^t

J. E.

Tiverton

15 Octob^r. 1628.

Capt. Waller.

(Endorsed) 15 Octob^r. 1628.

To Cap: Waller.

10. SIR HENRY WALLER TO SIR JOHN ELIOT: November 1st, 1628.

Sadly disappointed that Sir John Eliot was not 'on the spot.' There were risks of 'the widow' deciding for some other, 'because you are so farr absent.'

Honored

S^r you maye please to take notice that I received yo^r letter when I did hope accordinge to Mr Vallentines report to have seene yo^r pson. I could have wished that you had nott mett wth that wch did divert yo^r Journey. As for the buisines formerly ppounded it standes thus, the gentlewoman is nowe in towne & shee hath beene often moved concerninge yo^rselfe & her Answer fo^r the present is, that shee is resolved to keepe her selfe free and as yett will not enterteyne any motion of maryadge till shee hath setled her estate & her childes, beinge at present in some trouble about the wardshipp of her soññ whoe is begged from her by one¹ M^r. Walter Steward of the bedchamber, whose ayme is as mvch at the widdoe as the child: besides shee saith shee is resolved when shee doeth entend to marry, nott to match where any children are butt wth a single man, butt fo^r that I pswade my selfe that fewe women have that power over themselves butt that when a man comes agaynst whome noe other exception can bee made those resollutions are soone tvrned butt I move at a great disadvantage because you are soe

¹ "of," erased.

farr absent & others are present & daily sollicitinge, neither can I have soe mvch encouragement as to advise yo^r cominge vpp of pvrpose thoughe I could wish yo^r presence because I thincke If shee did butt see y^r pson & heare yo^r discourse shee could nott have soe hard a heart as to denye¹ In the meane time I shall nott be wantinge as occasion serves to doe my endeavo^r in this or any other & shall thincke my selfe happy to be esteemed

Yo^r trve thoughe poore frend ever ready to serve you

HENRYE WALLER.

London, Nov: 1^o, 1628.

II. BENJAMIN VALENTYNE TO SIR JOHN ELIOT :
November 4, 1628.

"Shortly after his return to Port Eliot, his friend Benjamin Valentine sent him news from London. His delay in coming up had been a general disappointment, which he was urged to repair with what speed he might; and the expressed anxiety of many friends respecting him suggests a pleasing picture of the unusual regard in which he was held by all. He was clearly something more, to all of them, than the mere leader of the country party in their house."—Forster, as before, ii. 377.

HONOURED S^a

I did hope to haue sene you here before nowe, but I see your outhur occasiones, haue altred your purpos. S^r Will: Armine wilbe here the nexte weeke, and he expicts

¹ "as," erased.

you here the next weeke after and soe to goe doune with him. my brother Godfrey longe[s] to see you at his howes, and so doe all your outhr frends ther. S^r Walter Erell longes to see you all soe, and is this day gone home, but willes me to lett you knowe, that he wilbe here agayn, with in a fortnight, to mette you: and I wisch that I may be soe happe as to atend you here, and wher eles you will command.

S^r Robert Philhupes, was sent for, vppon this occasion, that the debetie leutenantes, of that Contrey, did complaine of him to the Lords, that he should say to the hie constable of his deviscion, that they should find noe pouder, nor Armes, and wiled the Constable, to tell them soe, for ther was noe lawe for it, and besides that he had [t]olen from 30^l to 42^l, in the last Subsedy bookes so that he was a man in the Contrey that ded hender the kinges seruice. Stowell, and Woldren, ware his aposeres, the last saterday, at the Consill bord, wher the kinge sate in parson. it is to[o] longe to writte, the fouller of it, but the end was, that the king mad them frends, and willed them to be carfull of his seruice in the Contrey. Watte Long is sent for by a messenger: but he was here in house with me and is gone agayn, but he intends not to be found, for ther is order giuen, to call him in to the Star chamber, for being out of the Countrie, contrarie¹ to his othe, and y^t they intend to ron verye fayer wayes, with us: wich I shall neuer beleue vntel I see it.

¹ "the," erased.

Rochele is sertenly lost, for the king went in to it the 20th of the last month : So that desine is at a end, but no neuës of our Shippes. they haue don nothing with m^r fillton as y[e]t : he stands as a vndanted man, the Spanerds fakesion groues strong : and they saye we shall haue a peice with Spaine, for portter hath bene at madrede and is coming home, Arndell is in grase, and sette at bord : the Bushepe of norwige is mad Bushipe of Yorke, the Lord Crewe hath a 100^l ould rent giuen him, and furdur to be perfared, Esexe hath kiste the kinges hand, and Sae, and Lincion, the E : and they are this day all att Courtt, yours euer

BEN : VALENTYNE.

No^r. 4: 1628.

All above extraordinary spelling exactly after the original.

12. SIR HENRY MARTEN TO SIR JOHN ELIOT :

November 7, 1628.

"Wonderfully characteristic of Eliot is the next glimpse we get of him. It is not at Port Eliot, but in the admiralty-court of London, the scene of the old struggle for his fortune and honour which he had waged at such desperate odds with the duke [of Buckingham]. By his proctor he makes formal application, early in November, for the allowance of his account as vice-admiral handed in to his highness the late lord admiral, and for his own dismissal. It is a startling demand, all circumstances considered. He had already forced it before the court, it will be remembered, during the progress of the conspiracy against him, when delays had been interposed which even the duke's proctor hesitated to think just ; and now he has resolved to ascertain if justice will be denied him still.

II.

E

Perhaps one may see in it part of the present anxiety that possesses him in regard to the future altogether" (Forster, ii. 379). Sir Henry Marten in the following letter communicates the result of Eliot's 'application.' "It is on more than one account remarkable. It is decisive of the opinion of Eliot left upon a man of tried sagacity and large experience, who had been forced to take part in a series of transactions involving his fortune and good name: but it shows also that to form such an opinion and to express it were things involving then such different degrees of hazard, that the regard existing between two friends engaged in public life, if one was serving a minister of state and the other obnoxious to him, had to regulate its intercourse with very scrupulous care. The death of the duke alone had enabled Eliot and Marten to assume a frank and open correspondence" (*ibid.*).

S^a

I reß yo^r lrē by yo^r servant, and doe most heartely thanke y^e for remembring and renewing as it were of that league of mutuall loue and freindship between vs, w^{ch} I shall eū hold sacred and inviolable. As for the exception w^{ch} y^e take to my long cessaōn from writing, y^e will giue mee leave by way of replicaōn to say it is not well groundēd: for vntill Sept. last y^e must confesse that wee forbore by convention and agreement ne forte &c. since then I only had once opportunity by yo^r servant to write, w^{ch} I intended to haue done if according to appoyntm^t hee had called for my letter: and vpon this poynt hee and I are at issue: well; heerafter y^e shall haue no cause of such exception.

The cōmon voyce that Rochell is rendred vp to the ffrench-king, hath gayned an opinion of truth in most men, and fear in the best, though wee hear nothing thereof from

o' fleet, w^{ch} is vpon the' retorne as report will haue it, but wee haue certenties of neither.

For newes the Marquis Hamilton is sworne M^r of the horse.

In yo^r own busines there was a mo^oon made in Co^rt for the allowances of yo^r Accompt and yo^r dismissal ; but M^r Wyan, Procter heertofoe for my Lord Admirall did answer truely and materially, That that might not bee got vntill my Lord Admirall had an Ex^{tr} or Administrator w^{ch} might rep^sent his person, and review M^r Wyan his Proxie, otherwise if in the mean tyme any thing should bee done for y^e, it would bee done Nulliter contra mortuū indefensum, since issue was ioyned betwixt him & y^e in his life tyme, and by his death his Proxie only sleepeth till his will bee proved, but is not extinguished. And thus wth my heartiest comēda^ons and well wishes for yo^r health & o^r good meeting I take my leave & rest

Yo^r asured loving freind

HENRY MARTEN.

London
dⁿ Co^mons
7^o Nouem: 1628.

13. JOHN SELDEN TO SIR JOHN ELIOT : November 7,
1628.

"With what resolute determination to surrender no right which an appeal to the laws might secure to him, Eliot had thus revived a question he too well knew likely to revive also against him the old

conspiracy, is further proved by an interesting letter from Selden, bearing from the Temple the same date, and borne to him doubtless by the same messenger. He had sent to the great lawyer the patent whereby Buckingham finally conferred upon him the office, which, notwithstanding the act superseding him, he still asserted to be his; and had asked Selden how far the death of the grantor might in law affect the validity of a grant, of which he disputed the right of any mere order of council to deprive him" (Forster, ii. 380). He touches also on the probable effects of 'the Duke's' death on affairs.

NOBLE SIR,

For the occurrences of the present time, they are either so vncertain or so vnsafe to relate to you, that I know your own wisedome will pardon me for that you shall misse them here. Only thus much; my Lord Marshall is at the counsell table again & we all wish well here for the future, & some hope well. Your man desired me in your name to look ouer your patent which he deliuered to me in a box that is yet by me: to the end you might know whether it were void or no. I think it be void by the death of him that made it, though he haue a power giuen him to gr̃t such office for the life of the grauntee. For an officer for life cannot make another officer for the life of him that he makes vnlesse it be by some prescription w^{ch} in this case doubtlesse will not be found. And there is also a puiso in it for giuing an exact account at euery of the dayes named in it yeerly. It were a wonder to think that the account was giuen at the daies. And if on some night, the patent is that way also void. deer Sir, I would that within the narrow sphere of my power any thing were to be or could be pformed that might be accep-

table to you. If there were, & whensoever there is, no
man shall be found readier to obey your commands then,

Your most affectionat

freind to serue you

J. SELDEN.

Nov. 7. 1628.

The Temple.

14. SIR JOHN ELIOT TO SIR ROBERT COTTON:

December 30, 1628.

"Eliot had reached London, which he was never again to quit, on the 30th of December, having left Lord Warwick in Essex two days before. A disappointment awaited his arrival. Hastening to the house in Palace-yard, associated to him with so many intellectual enjoyments as well as noble services for freedom, he found that Sir Robert Cotton had left shortly before on some visit in the neighbourhood; so that the meeting to which he had looked forward with such anxiety, was again delayed" (Forster, *as before*, ii. 389).

S^r

if I had either bene Master of my selfe or had servd
a fortune exorable, I had not nowe bene straind to seeke
this entercourse by letter, w^{ch} in person I affected, and
from the extremitie of the west broughte it in my hopes
as the onelie happines to w^{ch} I did p^rtend. Yo^r knowe &
I p^rsume allowe the power comaunded mee this distance,
w^{ch} I beleeve has the like intereste in yo^r: I am sure it
merittes it, and in serving that I serve but yo^r, for such I
find the expressions of this place, that (if reporte maie geve
it) I am still in posfession of yo^r worth. Our intelligence

is vnc'taine from the Co^{rt}; and drawne to the forme of
 their conclusions. its said the Parliam^t shall adiorne a degree
 neerer to necessitie, to putt one straightnes to the occasion
 & the time wee are noe judges to determine of the facts,
 nor Prophets to divine of the successe. and for the reason
 what wisdom it implies Counsellors maie resolve, wee are
 none, beinge both the Sub^{ts} of ignorance¹ & feare. It
 wilbe some comforte in those doubttes, maie I be assurd
 that yo^r are well. I praie resolve mee soe by this messenger,
 whome I send of purpose for that newes. retaine mee in
 yo^r favo^r & knowe noe man more faithfullie does love yo^r
 then
 Yo^r frind & servante,

J. E.

Lees xxx^e Dec. 1628: St. Rob. Cotton.

(Endorsed) xxx^e Decemb^r. 1628.

St. Roberte Cotton.

15. SIR JOHN ELIOT TO CAP^t THOMAS GODFREY
 M.P. FOR ROMNEY, 19^o January, 1628/9.

LAUD was driving events forward with a high hand, and literally
 piling up 'matters of accusation' for the future. Eliot had his fore-
 bodings, and writes to his friend Godfrey somewhat despondently.

S^r

havinge a promise of conveyance to yo^r handes, I
 cannott but in acknowledgement of the great debte & ob-

¹ "of ignorance," words repeated and erased.

ligation yo^a have laid vpon mee geve yo^a this expresion of my thanckes, wth at a lefse distance I intended to performe, had either ¹ my fortune or the time allow'd mee soe much intereste in my selfe. What my occasions were of reste and some contynuançe in the cuntrye, I hope yo^a will have so good charitie to conceive : what necessitie is nowe vpon mee of attendance in this place yo^r owne reason will informe yo^a. in these I p^sume ² my excuse is fram'd soe iustlie, as it needes not an apologie. onelie this I muste tender for yo^r favo^r what ever place or busines may enforce, nothinge is soe powerfull to detaine mee in affection from yo^r service, but in desire & readines I shalbe ever p^sente wth your wishes. Wee have yet noe intelligence to geve yo^a, all is in expectation, o^r feares excede o^r hopes, daunger enlarg's it selfe in soe greate a measure on vs that nothing but heaven shrowds vs from dispaire. I praie rep^sent my service to yo^r Ladie, and till I maie geve yo^a more asurance accepte this testimonie that I am

Yo^r most ³ faithfull frind & servant,

J. E.

Westm. 19 Jan: 1628.

Cap. Godfrey.

(Endorsed) 19^o Januari 1628.

to Cap : Godfrey.

¹ "the," erased.

² "I," erased.

³ "frind," erased.

16. SIR JOHN ELIOT TO HIS FATHER-IN-LAW, RICHARD
GEDYE, ESQ., 29^o January, 1628/9.

Good and stout-hearted Master Gedye is longing to hear oftener from his illustrious and beloved son-in-law. (See Forster, as before, ii. 402.)

S^r

I have not had an opportunite to write since my cominge vp, and though it maie seeme an omission of my dutie, yet I p'sume yo^r will geve it an interpretation of more favor, there beinge nothing in my desires more then your satisfaccōn, of wth I hope yo^r have a full asurance. I was this x[m]as in Essex wth my Lo : of Warwick, and retornd hether but newlie before the pliament. since there has happened nothing of alteration worthie yo^r acquaintance, all thinges standinge in the termes they did, or worse. Lucas I cannott heare of, whome I have dailie inquired for and soe accompte in that maie be expected.

Hunkin tells mee hee has receaved a generall direction from yo^r for the treatie wth y^e B^p but nothinge is yet done, and in this order I can looke for little at his handes. I shall now be faine to resume that occasion to my self; w^{ch} if wth a small trouble in the Cuntie hee had first attempted wth much advauntage mighte easilie have bene broughte on. I hope yo^r all retaine yo^r healthes at Trebursey though I heare the sicknes prov'd mortall [to] yo^r ser-

vante. I shall dailie praie for the contynewance of yo^r
happines and wilbe ever

Yo^r most affectionat son in law

J. E.

Westm. 29

Jan. 1628.

(Endorsed) 29 Jan. 1628.

To M^r Geddye.

17. The Same to the Same: 2^d Feb^r 1628/9.

"A few days later Sir John Eliot wrote again. By this time he had revived in the Commons' House the report of the Committee which had sat on the Stannaries, and had obtained an order for again bringing up the witnesses against Mohun. But unexpected difficulties intervened; and it was suspected that not a few who formerly gave evidence had been tampered with or got out of the way." Forster, ii. 403.

S^a

I wrote to yo^r latelie by a footeman whoe gave the firste opportunitie has bene offered since my cominge vp. this is nowe the second, w^{ch} I cannott p^{as}se wthout a line or twoe to testifie the affections that I have, and to drawe if I maie be worthie of that favour the like remembraunces from yo^r, w^{ch} will geve mee a satisfaction beyound all other hopes. this m^essenger comes nowe wth warrant for the bringing vp of the wittneses in the case of Mohun. some of them are neere yo^r; if yo^r see them and find anie

II.

F

indisposition in them to the service I praie remove them from it, and lett them knowe they shall incurr a daunger to themselves if they appeare backward, and yet in the end be inforc't to the same thinge vpon more p'iudice: the house beinge much affected to the cause for their owne hono^r, as likewies for yo^r other Cuntrymen whoe will speedilie be sent for. And the order ag^t Wyvell is allreadie graunted, from w^{ch} if they wthdrawe or fulie themselves, there is a course resolv'd on p'sentlie to attaint them. Burges yo^r neighbour is sent for by this war^t w^{ch} is nowe dispatcht, and I hope hee will not faile apparance. I doubt not but if they[r] backwardness detract not, something wilbe done for the example & aduantage of the Cuntrye. I haue appointed this afternoone being a leisure, to see o^r Bishopp; what reception I shall have yo^a shall knowe by the nexte messenger and if the waie be open I will gieve some overture to the treatie for my lease. thus in haste wth my praiera for the contynewance of yo^r health and y^e bleissing of all the little ones I reste

Yo^r most affectionate sonne in law

J: E.

West: 2^o.

febr. 1628. M^r. Geddy.¹

[Endorsed] 2^o febr. 1628

To M^r Geddy

¹ This name in a later hand.

18. SIR ROBERT COTTON TO SIR JOHN ELIOT :
Febr 2. 1628/9.

(Endorsed 'To my dear and worthie S^r Joh. Eliot.')

"Eliot wished to have Cotton's help how best to word his proposed censure of Laud's declaration on public grounds; and the terms of his letter show how difficult it was to communicate safely on such subjects, even with all the advantage of trusted messengers." (Forster, as before, ii. 419.) The undated half-sheet on which Sir John Eliot's lines were written is still preserved among Cotton's MSS. in the British Museum (Cotton MSS. Jul. C. III. fol. 169), and is here given in order to introduce Sir Robert Cotton's answer, which follows:—

S^r.

I sent my servante Latelie to impart a businesse to y^e of noe small secrecie & importance w^{ch} I hardly dar'd communicat & yet kno . . it not fitt to bee conceald. the assuranc of y^r Love is my great advantage vpon w^{ch} I may repose myself & therfore I presum'd to entreat y^r advise & aide according to the reason & necessitie of soe great a worke, having in y^r Love as much confidence as in my self. When y^e thinke it fitt to send hither to me this messenger wilbe the convoy, whom I have appointed to attend y^e, (myne owne man being gone out of towne), his discretion is only for the carriage (like a wise porter) & therfore the directions I must desire privatly in a word or

two from y^e, w^{ch} I shall observe & returne y^e the success.
excuse my bouldness & assure y^e self I shall ever be

Y^r most faithfull servant

J. ELIOT.

endorsed

To my hono^{ble} frinde S^r

Robert Cotton k^t & baronet.

With reference to the conclusion of the following paper, which is the answer to the preceding letter, I had copied it as herein printed, and I cannot recognize the difficulty it presented to Forster and others. He read "a voted Resolution of the House, and that wurded in those Reirste," adding—"Whether Sir Robert meant by the last word to say that the resolutions were 'rehearsed' in his paper, which his abominable spelling and writing would appear to show, or only that he had revised them, which the manuscript leaves equally possible, I cannot satisfy myself." Then further—"I referred it to my friend Mr. [John] Bruce, who pronounces for rehearsed; very justly adding, however, that 'it is a mode of spelling the word that I should think Sir Robert would not have found even in his library; but the paper is so tender in that part, that I am almost afraid to touch, or even look at it'" (ii. 420). I make it clearly "and that recorded in their Register," and *certainly* the last word is not 'Reirste,' while 'Reirste' never could have stood for 'rehearsed.'

QUESTIONS DETERMINED [by the Houf of parlam^t ¹]

1. That the Spūall and Temporall Persons of the Kingdome of ENGLAND vnder his Ma^{ty} as HEAD make not

¹ The words in brackets are added by Eliot himself.

together the CATHOLIQUE BODY of the Church of ENGLAND.

2. That Archbishops, Bishops and the rest of the Cleargie assembled and authorized in the Convoca^on House cannot impose vpon the Layty an OBEDIENCE and CONFORMITIE to any DOCTRINE or DISCIPLINE by them agreed on in their Assemblie w^hout the full Assent therevnto in Parliam^t.
3. That all Persons as well Ecclesiasticall as Temporall are bound to HOLD and MAINTAINE as y^e Doctrine of the Church of ENGLAND those things LITERALL to w^{ch} they gave their full ASSENTS in PARLIAM^t in the 13^o ELIZ. and to no other.
- [4]. That whosoever shall either by preaching^a or writinge publishe any other doctrine then was assented to by that ACT of 13^o Eliz: is guilty of Innova^on and to be punished^b as a Breaker of the Lawes and a Disturber of the quiet & Peace^c of the Church and Commonwealth:

If you pass to morrow somthinge to the purpos above It will pvent [=prevent?] the plott I beleav of thos Bisshops that haue fanfied a way to introduc Inoua-

^a This word Forster oddly misprints 'publishinge.' It is Cotton's peculiar but invariable elongated 'a' that misled him here and elsewhere, e. g. also he reads 'his Head' for 'as Head,' page 36, last l.

^b 'thought' or some such word written and erased here.

^c Forster fills in [peace] as if it were not in the original, but it is.

tions by a Conuocation power the[y] may haue by
leau. And it wilbe a hapy conclusion of your disput
of Religion to preuent such a practice by a voted Refo-
lution of the Housf and that recorded in their Register.

yours for euer

Ro: COTTON

Endorsed

Feb. 2. 1628

Fo[r] my dear and worthy
S^r Joh. Eliot.¹

19. CAP^t THOMAS GODFREY TO SIR JOHN ELIOT:

Feb. 4^o 1628/9.

Sir John Eliot has been speaking out nobly and unmistakably 'in the House.' He received abundant thanks. The present letter is one of many contemporary that reveal "the pinch and pressure that was felt in almost every English town, and from which all were looking to parliament to relieve them." (Forster, ii. 426.)

NOBLE S^s

I receiued yo^r kinde letter, wherin I was muche
comforted to heare of yo^r good healthe the w^{ch} I shall euer

¹ Forster transfers this to the commencement of the letter—a not rare practice, unluckily, of his in 'cooking' his documents. He overstates alike the difficulty of the penmanship and the badness of the spelling of good Sir Robert.

praye for, and for a blefsinge vppon yo^r endeuo^r in the publicke seruice; If the Lorde shalbe soe mercifull to this sinfull Lande, as to suffer good men to make a reformation in the Church, & Common-wealthe, I beseeche you haue this poore Towne of Grantham in remembrance, w^{ch} is miserable seru'd wth two base Vicars. I haue formerlie acquainted you wth some perticulers of them, the w^{ch} I keepe in store, and shalbe reddie (if there be occasion) to attende you in that buisnes; the w^{ch} I leaue to yo^r consideration, beinge well asured you will take all occasions to further God his Cause, and committ you to his tuition whoe (in soe doinge) will keepe you safe, remembringe my wiues loue and my service to you eu^r restinge

Yo^r most faythfull freind & seruant

THO: GODFREY.

Grantham febr: 4th

1628.

20. BISHOP JOSEPH HALL TO SIR JOHN ELIOT:

Feb. 6, 1628/9.

Many appeals were made to Sir John Eliot. "One of these," says Foster, "possesses a singular interest derived from the character and position of its writer. The proclamation against Arminian controversies, professedly putting down the books of Montagu and Manwaring, but practically suppressing only all the answers to them, had been brought more than once under debate, by petitions as well from the printers whose property had been seized under it, as from

the writers who already had been dragged by it before the Star-chamber and high commission. Among these was Mr. Henry Burton, treated afterwards so cruelly by Laud, whose *Babel not Bethel, that is, the Church of Rome, no true Visible Church of Christ, being an answer to Hugh Cholmley's challenge, and Robert Butterfield's maschill*, had been one of the books summarily laid hold of. Now it happened that Cholmley was bishop Hall's chaplain and intimate friend, and that the tenet he defended had been strongly upheld by Hall himself, otherwise a man from whom the divines or partisans of Rome had received no favour. It was nevertheless felt and said in the House, when Sir James Perrot stated that bishop Laud had licensed Cholmley and Butterfield, and had refused his license to Burton, that the latter had received injustice: and the bishop, taking alarm at this, made instant appeal to Eliot. They had seen each other some days before, on the occasion of Eliot's calling upon the bishop in Drury-lane on the business of the lease, when Hall had given him a tract of his own, showing his part in the controversy; and upon mention of the matter in the house, he did not scruple at once to ask Eliot to throw over him, against further assailants, his powerful shield. The familiar letters of this celebrated man are too rare not to attract to them a special welcome; but it is also an important contribution to our knowledge of the esteem in which Eliot was held by so famous a writer and divine, and of that consciousness of the justice and fairness of his character which could alone have suggested such an appeal as this to a man leading the Puritan opposition." (Forster, as before, ii. 427/8.)

S^r w^t my best services

In yo^r kinde visitaōn of mee, the other day (for w^e I professe myselfe yo^r true and thankfull debter) I was bold to present y^a w^t a poore litle pamphlet; w^e if you haue had leasure to peruse hath let you see what intolerable wrongs of scandalous aspersions haue bene put vpon mee

by some, whether ignorant, or wilfull mis-takers ; One Mr Burton was the man, that in print first rayzed these clamors against mee ; labouring to possesse the world w^t an opinion, that I went about to helpe popery ouer the stile, in that most innocent, & true assertion of the true being and visibility of the Roman Church, for the remedy of w^t scandall, I putt forth first a cleare aduertisement, and then, after, this more cleare Reconciler ; wherew^t, all ingenuous men that euer I haue heard of, professe themselues fully satisfied ; Only this Mr. Burton, who, it seemes (*dolens dico*) loues the trouble of the Church, no lesse then I do peace, will needes yet stirre the coales, and, as if I had said nothing, for the appeasing of this vnhappy strife, hath now stolne out a book of great length, and much spight against the two abettors of that position, Mr. Cholmly, & Mr. Butterfield, the one my chaplaine, the other a stranger to mee, but of great parts, & hopes ; w^he dedicates boldly to the honorable Court of Parlement ; therein suggesting very maliciously, that Mr. Cholmly, & my selfe (to whom that book of Mr. Chol^s. is dedicated) haue sure some plot in hand of restoring Popery to England, or England to Popery. S^r. I beseech y^a be sensible of this shamefull injury ; for mee, I think I haue giuen sufficient ingagements to the world of my zealous defiances of Popery ; and for Mr. Cholmly, I do in verbo Episcopi, professe, of my intimate knowledge of him (from both our cradles) that he is as farre from Popery as my selfe ; or any Burton that beares an head ; he is an honest, true-hearted, well affected, &

learned Divine, onely his zeale to mee, and to that most iust cause hath carryed him into some vehemence against Mr. Burtons ill handling of this businesse ; as not abiding, that we should oppose Popery out of false grounds ; and affixe vntruthes vpon the worst aduersaries ;

I confesse Mr. Burton hath much aduantage of the pretence ; as seeming to haue zeale on his side, and care to preuent the daunger of many soules ; but let me boldly say, truth is on ours ; neither can there be any daunger of the losse of one hayre of the head of any Chrāñ in this tenet, if it be rightly vnderstood ; but rather a strong aduantage against the aduersary ; But it is not my intent to enter into the merits of the cause, in this letter ; Let it suffice mee to say ; that there is no learned divine in Christendome, who either will, or can differ from my sense in this position ; as it is lately confirmed to mee vnder the hands of two reverend & learned Bishops ; B. Moreton ; and B. Dauenant : Now, my occāñ of this trouble to you, is ; an informāñ w^e was given mee of some mention of this businesse in yo^r Honorable house ; not wthout a motion of some farther question to be made of M^r. Cholmley ; wherein, if any such thing be, let me desire yo^r iust fauour. you know well what both charge, & trouble, & blemish are wont to follow a publick accusatory call to that awfull Court ; all w^e I would be loath to see alight vpō my old honest colleague : I beseech y^a, if you perceiue any danger herof, besides giuing mee the notice, that y^a wilbe pleased to speak wth M^r. Speaker hereaboutes : to whom, as my selfe, so M^r. Cholmly hath bene anciently & well knowne :

Craving pardō for this boldnesē, and relying vpō yo^r noble
fauour herein as a busines w^e I do very tenderly affect, I
take leaue, and hartily professe my selfe

Your much deuoted
frend and seruant

Jos. EXON:

Drury lane

Feb. 6^o. 1628.

[Endorsed] february 6^o. 1628

from the bishopp of Exon.

21. SIR JOHN ELIOT TO BISHOP HALL:

6 Feb. 1628/9.

Sir John Eliot is characteristically 'friendly' in his answer to the
venerable Bishop.

My Lo:

In the honor I had by my late admission to y^r p'sence
it was noe small part of the happines I receavd¹ from y^r
hands to be² presented wth those lines w^{ch} (besides the
knowne character of y^r worth) import a vindication of y^r
truth against all scandall & aspersions. to me I confesse it
had the same purity before, & generally I beleeeve that
apprehension was so fixt as noe detraction could impeach it;
yet if³ it be⁴ by anie scepticks questiond (of w^{ch} I confess

¹ "to be tenderd" semi erased. ² several words here semi erased.

³ "the," erased.

⁴ "were opposed by anie ignorance or malice," semi erased.

I heard not) the satisfaction to the world is such that they must⁶ now swallow the poyson of their owne ignorance or malice. either in this pticular for y^rself or the others for y^r frinds ther has not yet beene anie overture⁶ wth vs:⁷ if ther be⁸ heerafter I shall⁹ so carefully intend it that I hope to give y^r Lo^p some testimonie therein¹⁰ how much I am

Yo^r deuoted Servant

6^o febr
1628.

Bish. of Exon.

[Endorsed] 6^o febr. 1628.

To y^r B^p of Exon.

22. SIR JOHN ELIOT TO MRS. CORBET: 11th Feby.

1628/9.

This 'sweet' correspondent, Mrs. = Miss, daughter of Sir John Corbet, one of the five knights, so "sued their habeas against the loan," is sending a family present to Sir John, and very gravely pleasant is the acknowledgment of it and her letter. The date '11th Feby' is historic, as being that whereon "Mr. Cromwell made his first speech" in the House of Commons.

⁶ "opposer must now," semi erased.

⁸ "made," erased.

⁷ "when," erased.

⁹ "shall," erased.

¹⁰ "indeaver," erased.

¹⁰ "if," erased.

SWEET M^{rs}. CORBETT

If my ill fortunes could admitt of happines y^r Letters would import it, w^{ch} have somuch of favor to one soe vnworthie of that honor as I must esteeme it a full satisfaction to my wishes, much beyond my hopes. the obligation w^{ch} I have to y^r memorie & virtues is great & I have nothing to answear it but the acknowledgment of my debt. for that I had an expectation lately of some opportunity to have given it y^a in Norfolke: but the season then¹ prevented me: & now (though I confes I have it most in my desires) the necessity of that service to w^{ch} I am ingag^d does soe farr master me that I cannot wthout a prejudice to that opinion y^a allowe me presume vpon any minute to that end, vntill this convention be determined, of w^{ch} (if it effect any thing fitt for y^r intelligence) I shalbe² then glad to geve y^a the narrative. our labors are yet fruitles & hard, & ther is little promise in the entrance. our expectation is greater then the hope & yet ther is that can exceed both in the success. y^r praers heerin wilbe noe small advantage, w^{ch} as I am confident we have³ I must still begg, &⁴ in every prosperity that happens I shall thinke that has beene the occasion. the gentlemen heer whom y^a were pleasd to remember represent wth me all ther best services to y^a.⁵ we all returne y^a thanks for y^r kinde

¹ "prese," erased.

² "glad," erased.

³ "we," erased.

⁴ a word erased.

⁵ "& having . . . night tasted of y^r kinde remembrance both," semi erased.

present; & from me I beseech y^e accept this poore asu-
rance w^{ch} shall ever binde me to be

Y^r most faithfull servant

J. E.

xj^{mo} febr
1628.

[Endorsed] xj^{mo} febr. 1628
to M^{rs} Corbett

24. SIR BEVILL GRENVILE TO SIR JOHN ELIOT:

Feb. 14th, 1628/9.

All 'patriots' are needed to be 'in the House,' and Sir John Eliot
has been writing urgently for the grand old lion-heart's presence.

S^a,

I hope, in the mercifull Court of y^r judgment, I
shall not vndergoe a harder censure, for my so longe con-
strained absence, & neglect of duty, in my attendance att
y^e Parliament, then In mine owne thoughts, I doe inflict
on my selfe. None can acknowledge his fault more, nor
shall blame me somuch for it, as I doe my selfe. This is
enough, to so noble a frend. & my occasions, have not
been ordinary. I shall humbly beseeche you, to procure the
Speakers lfe for me, to y^e Judges of our Circuit, for to
stoppe a Tryall, y^e concernes some land of mine, for this
Afsizes, because I cañott attend itt, & deliver it to Kitt
Osmond, who will attend you for it. I thinke this is an

ordinary courtesy, for to be graunted, to a member of y^e house, by the Speaker. but if you please to procure it, you shall much oblige him, y^e hath vow'd himselfe to be

Y^r faithfull servant

BEVILL GRENVILLE.

Stow, Feb. 14

1628.

25. SIR JOHN ELIOT TO SIR BEVILL GRENVILLE :

25th Feb. 1628/9.

"Eliot's reply [to Grenville] bears date on the 25th February, when the sitting had suddenly broken up at the King's message; but beyond special expressions of anxiety, and personal unhappiness at having missed Grenville's service, on which he lays much stress, he says nothing of the crisis in which they stand. It would not have been safe."—(Forster, as before, ii. 442.) *

S^a

had not the daillie expectation of y^{or} coming vp prevented mee I had long ere this geven yo^r some sence of the vnhappines I conceave in that distance nowe betweene vs, for as^t yo^r afsistance in the pliam^t is some cause whie

* A short private application-letter from an unknown, 'M. Oldisworth', follows No. 24, but as it is of no public interest, and is already printed in Forster, as before, ii. 427, note, it is not repeated here.

1 "my pticuler affections," semi erased.

I desire yo^r p^rsence,² for³ perticuler reasons doe inforce it as the obiecte of my affeccōn. In yo^r busines I knowe not what answere to retorne to geve yo^a satisfaccōn: yo^r instructions are soe shorte though they geve mee the hope of yo^r requeste for the stoppage of a tryall yet they have noe mention of the parties in whose names it is to be, nor of the Countie where the sceane is laid, soe as I⁴ muste confesse though I p^rsum'd to move it in the generall and had it ordered by the house a man dat⁵ should be graunted, it exceeded both my knowledge and experience, and all the abilities of the Speaker howe it mighte be drawne. M^r. Osmond was gone before I red the lre, and I can⁶ by noe diligence inquire by whome to be inform'd soe as I muste on this⁷ occasion render yo^a onelie my good meaning for a service. yet thus muche by another waie to satisfie yo^a, if y^a please by your owne Letter at the Afsises or by a mocōn of y^r Counsell to intimate yo^r p^rviledg of parliament, it will have the same operation wth thother, and noe Judge will once denye it. I receaved this daie A lre from M^r. Treffry importuning his old suite, wth yet I have not had opportunitie to move nor soe much time (though mine owne lief were in the ballance) to sollicit it. when yo^a send to him I praie geve him this excuse wth the remembrance of my service, and geve him this asurance that

² "soe my perticuler affeccōns want that satisfaccōn wth they covett," semi erased.

⁴ "conf.," erased.

⁵ "could," erased.

³ "any," erased.

⁶ "man that," erased.

⁷ "service," erased.

what his owne. Judgement would allowe him were hee serving in my place, the same respecte by mee shalbe geven to this case. And when I maie effecte anie thing worthie his expectation hee shall have a iuste accompte. And soe craving yo^r pdon in other thinges wth the representation of my service to my sister, kising yo^r handes I rest

Yo^r affectionate Servante

J. E.

westminster 25^o
febr. 1628.

26. SIR DUDLEY DIGGES TO SIR JOHN ELIOT.

This was the former "fellow-prisoner in the Tower" of Eliot. He had ——— complied, and got his reward in 'place.' Nevertheless Forster speaks gently of him (ii. 443/4). He little knew the 'stuff' of which his friend was made.

DEERE BROTHER

My best wishes fyrst salute you, Then I pray know I have spoken wth S^r W. Herbert, and fynd such a mixture of vnkind kindnesse in him that I am the more desirous this breach should be salued. I pray stopp M^r Kirton till you and I may Confer about it. For the Publick businesse how euer our ways may seeme to Differ, our Ends agree, and I am not out of hope to see a happy issue one day. Yf this day any cast stones or Dirt at my ffreind, Let me pray you to preserue y^r self cleer, a looker on, wth Credit mee,

II.

H

yf my weaknesse bee worth y^r Crediting, will both aduantage you, and much Content him that is Truly and ffaythfully

Yo^r servant

DUDLY DIGGERS.

This Wednesday evg,

27. SIR JOHN ELIOT TO HIS FATHER-IN-LAW,
RICHARD GEDIE, ESQ. 1628/9.

Lights and shadows of family-experiences. Very beautiful is the reverential affection of Gedye toward Eliot.

S₂

I hope yo^a are satisfied by former letters I have written that my silence has not bene soe longe as yo^a suppose nor could soe farr make me guiltie of those duties vnto yo^a for w^{ch} I mighte find either occasion or opportunitie. I am sorrie to heare you have not enioyed the like health that wee have but I thancke god that the infec^{ti}on goes noe further to seize on the Children or your self¹ though I cannott but a little wonder at th^e adventure w^{ch} yo^a make to remaine soe neere the sicknes, having the com^{ma}und of the house at Cuttenb. that is soe free. I have not yet heard of M^r Rous whome by yo^r l^{ies} I expecte but when hee comes both for Jacobston and the reste, I will geve him what furtherance I maie; I could not for the

¹ "wherein," erased.

advowson make anie dispatch from hence because I knewe not his desire to whome it should be graunted, but when hee comes or shall to that end signifie his will, I will p'sentlie effecte it. ffor yo^r busines in the Chauncerie or that concerning the debte of EdgECumb I cann geve yo^a noe accompte (Rowe having not bene wth mee, nor Lucas more then once, though oftentimes sollicitd, and at his being wth mee hee found mee soe ingag'd as I had noe minute to allowe him for the least conference, but prai'd him to afford mee a newe leisure w^{ch} hee promis'd but does not yet performe) I know not what satisfacōn hee gives yo^a in the busines of yo^r purchase but I heare hee complains for want of instruccōns from yo^a howe yo^a will have it taken, in which in my opinion there can be noe advantage by delay but t'were well yo^a had it done. Wee have nothing yet to certifie of the hope of o^r p'ceedinges: the intenōn is whollie fixte vpon the matters of religion, w^{ch} are in such state & condition nowe discover'd as if there be not some quicke p'venōn made t'will render vs obnoxious to daunger if not ruine: other evils are hardlie felt for this in which there is such neede of assistance of good praiers that wee muste crave your helpe to seeke that blefing w^{ch} I shall ever begg maie be retorn'd both on yo^r self and all the little ones. And soe wth rep'sentation of my service I rest

Yo^r most affectionate sonne in law

J. E.

19 Feb.
1628.

28. SIR JOHN ELIOT TO RICHARD KNIGHTLEY, Esq.,
M.P. (NORTHAMPTONSHIRE), JUNE 28th, 1629.

Full of pathetic sweetness of affection and gratitude toward another of his "four staunch friends."

S^a

though wth much vnwillingnes I become a trouble to my frendes, I haue for the p'sent made vse of your courtesy by your servant, wth god willing shalbe carefullie return'd, & (as in meane things I must acknowledge it) giue me leaue to saie you have exprest soe much in this, that, if pticulars could add to the generall meritt of your goodnes my ingagem^t were increasd wth formerlie had oblig'd¹ me in a ppetuities of frendship. In this new character of yo^r goodnes (though I have nothing² to observe more then is continuallie implied in the scope of all your accōns, wth floweing from the trew principles of vertew (as plutarke saies of Alexander) in everie instance comp'hend the habits of each kinde) yett I cannot wthout admiration of the tyme, but single out some cercumstances for memorie in rep'satation of yo^r worth; y^t there is a frendshipe in aduersities; that its not founded one the sandes, that its not soweri vppon the stones, but growes against all violence & heat, & indures all stormes & tempests; naie a frendshipe that is volentarye, and active, seeking occasions of prooffe and demonstraçon; not wayting for invitation or

¹ "by," erased.

² "more," erased.

desire: such a frindship, such a varietie, as ingratitude cannot p^riudice. lett me tell yo^r in these troubles it is a great comfort to retheyne the affection of our frindea, w^{ch} amongst the manie mercies of my God, is not to me the least, but when in outward things I reckon them there I still beginn. should I enumerate all the ble^ssings I haue had, being fallen on that mention, I should make this letter a storie of his wonders who has giuen me this liberty to remember them, and extend this paper to a volume, w^{ch} would be too troublesome to you as to neglect them were ingratitude. lett me therefore make in short some confes^sion vnto you whose prayers I know I have had (for what can be more proper then to shew you the effect of yo^r petitions, that soe they may be againe seconded wth your thanks to glorifie that Master w^{ch} is soe propitious to his seruante) lett me therefore giue you some accompt of my restraⁱnte, some generall notions of the app^rhension that has followed it (for to that does correspond the qualitie of each ffortune as god does sorte it to the frame & disposition of the minde) & from thence you shall see a reflection of such mercies that will rep^rsent a libertye in my imp^risment, and happiⁿesse for miserie, take it in this (& would I could giue it you at full to the latitude and extension of my hart) more then in the tender sorrow for my sinnes, w^{ch} vnto God, are a iust cause of these afflictions (& I hope will not be unprofitable impos'd) I haue not in all these trialls that¹ are past felt the least disturbance yet wthin me: noe daie

¹ "have," erased.

has seemed to long, noe night has once been tedious, noe feares, noe terrours, noe opposd power or greatnes has af-frighted me; noe outward croises or losses haue been troublesome;³ noe grieffe, noe sadnesse, noe malancholie has opprest me, but a contynuall pleasure and ioy in the al-mightie, has still comforted me: the influence of his graces has enricht me, his power, his greatnesse has secur'd me; his all sufficiencie has giuen me both a bouldnes & confi-dence in him, that noe attempt could move it. consider this and the weaknes of your frind (then whome there is none⁴ has more infirmitie), and iudge what blessing he has had: adde but the incessant practise of the aduersaries, and weigh how little power of resistance is in me, & then giue me your opinion on the whole whether I haue not been compassed about wth mercy on every side. This deer frind does soe affect me that I want expresion for my ioy, w^{ch} I cannot yet but in some manner thus diliver, to incite yo^r assistance to my god, that as I p'sume⁴ you haue been wth me in the competition of these blessings, I might agine re-ceave your help in the retribution of my thanks, w^{ch} is the acknowledgm^t of a debt vnanswearable by me, & only to be satisfied by him that is both my advocate, & pledge; But I feare I haue exceeded the pportion of a letter, & haueing begunne againe to write I forgett to make an-end. lett me not omitt to thanke you for your booke w^{ch} has ben my Counsellor and companion. I wishe I had any thinge

³ "to me," semi erased.

⁴ "that," erased.

⁴ "he," erased.

to returne worthy yo^r acceptance. My prayers you haue,
& when I may have liberty of more in your power it shalbe
to comand it. In the meane tyme take this asurance from
me that am

Yo^r most faithfull frind & Brother

J. E.

Junij 25^o
1629.

[Endorsed] 25 July. 1629

To Mr. Knightly.

29. SIR JOHN ELIOT TO HIS SONS : 3 July, 1629.

With deepened pathos, with most affecting yearning over his
'boys'—alas! wayward and thoughtless—does the imprisoned father
write them in this long and priceless letter. It was one of numerous
appeals.

SONNS

If my desires had beene valuable for one hower I
had longe since written to y^e : w^{ch} Mr Little does¹ deliver
a larger character of my ffortune, that in nothing has
allowed me to be master of my self. I have formerly beene
p^rvented by imploiment w^{ch} was soe tyrannicall² on that
time, as all minutes were anticipated: now my leasure
contradicts me & is soe violent on the contrary, soe great

The underment⁴ words, &c. are written, & erased or semi erased.

¹ "express."

² "of."

an enemy to all action, as it makes it selfe vnusefull: both leasure & busines have opposed me, either in time or libertie, that I have had noe means of expresion but my praiers, in w^{ch} I have never faild to make God^s the witness of my love, whose blessings, I doubt not will deduce it in some evidence, to y^a. And having now gotten a little opportunity (though by stealth) I cannot but give it some testimony from my self, to let y^a see my earnest expectation of y^r good. in w^{ch} both my hopes & happines are⁴ fixt as in their Sphear, w^{ch} moves wth y^r indeavors, though guided by the influence of⁵ a greater power. It is noe small satisfaction to me when I have⁷ intelligence of y^r health, & I bleis heaven for it as some effect of my petitions: but⁹ to hear of the progress of y^r learning, of y^r aptnes & diligence in that; of y^r carefull attendance on all exercises of religion, & the instruction & improvement of the minde (w^{ch} are foundations for a future building) this does infuse another spirit to me & extends my comforts to a latitude that hardly is exprefible. I cannot but in generall thus discover it, partly to intimat the⁸ pitch of my affections, that¹⁰ y^r course may leuell wth it; partly to represent y^r owne example to y^a that y^a digrefs not from that rule,¹¹

The underment^d words, &c. are written, & erased or semi erased.

³ "my." as they

⁴ "soe plac't, as there cheife motions are encompassed by that."

⁵ "that turnes." ⁶ "the divine greater power, all-ruling power."

⁷ "but." ⁸ "when." ⁹ "heigthe." pitch.

¹⁰ "y^a may direct y^r." ¹¹ "but."

w^{ch} practise & experience¹² continually must better. It is a fine history well studied,¹³ the observation of our selves, the exact veiw of our owne actions to examine what has past: it¹⁴ begettis a great knowledg of perticulars, taking of all kindes; &¹⁵ gives a large advantag to the iudgment truly to discerne, for it carries a full prospect of the hart, w^{ch} opens the intention, & through that simplicity is seene the principle of each motion w^{ch} shadowed or dissembled conceales the good or evill. from thence having the true knowledg of perticulars what we have done & how; & the iudgment vpon that, what our works saie to vs; then come we to reflect vpon our selves for the censure of each action, wherin every little error is discovered, every obliquity is seene, w^{ch}, by the reprehension of the conscience (the most¹⁶ awfull of tribunalls) being brought to a secret confession, drawes a free repentance & submission for the fault, & soe is reduc't to conformity againe. this¹⁷ fruite has the study of our selves, besides many other benefitts: the varietie of contingencie & accident, in our persons, in our ffortunes, in our frinds, are as so many lectures of philosophie shewing the doubtfull being & possession we have heer; the incertaynty of our frinds, the mutabilitie of our ffortunes, the anxietie of our lives, the¹⁸ divers changes & vicissitudes they are subiect to; w^{ch}

The underment^d words, &c. are written, & erased or semi erased.

¹² "hereafter will make."

¹³ "(& therefore I more willingly propose it)."

¹⁴ "gives."
reflects

¹⁵ "makes." ¹⁶ "powerfull." ¹⁷ "benefitt." ¹⁸ "many."

II.

I

make vp that conclusion in divinity that we are but pilgrims & strangers in this world, & therefore should not love it; but our rest & habitation must be elsewhere. if I should take occasion from my self to dilate this pointe more fully, what a catalogue could I give of instances of all ¹⁹ sorts! what a continuitie of sufferings, of w^{ch} ther is yet noe end? should ²⁰ these evils be complained? should I make lamentation of these crosses? should I conceive the worse of my condition in the study of my self that such adversities oppose me? noe; I may not; (& yet I will not be soe Stoicall as not to thinke them evils, I will not doe that preiudice to virtue by detraction of her adversarie). they are evils soe I doe confess them, but of that nature, ²¹ & soe follow'd, soe neighbouring vpon good, as they are noe cause of ²² sorrowe, but of ioye: ²³ seeinge whose enemyes ²⁴ they make vs; enemies of fortune, enemies of the world, enemies of their children; & to know for whom we suffer; ²⁵ for him that is ²⁶ their enemye, ²⁷ for him that can command them, whose agents only & instruments they are to worke his trialls ²⁸ on vs w^{ch} may render vs more perfect & acceptable to himself, ²⁹

The underment^d words &c. are written, & erased or semi erased.

¹⁹ "kindes."

²⁰ "I complaine those evils."

²¹

²² "lamentation."

²³ "to see."

²⁴ "we are."

²⁵ "it."

²⁶ "an."

²⁷ "to these."

²⁸ "vpon."

²⁹ "whose favors are exprest by such trialls & afflictions, w^{ch} being truly weighed cannot end but in happiness & ioye."

never

should these enforce a sorrow w^{ch} are the true touches of his favor & not ³⁰ affect vs ³¹ rather w^{ch} the higher apprehension of our happiness. Amongst my many obligations to my G. w^{ch} prove the infinitie of his mercies, that like a full streame have beene always flowing ³² on me, ther is none concerning this life, wherein I have found more pleasure or advantage then in these trialls & afflictions: (naie; I may not limitt it soe narrowly w^{ch} in the confines of this life w^{ch} I hope shall extend much further) the operations they have had, the new effects they worke, the discoveries they ³³ make vpon ourselves, vpon others, vpon all; shewing the ³⁴ scope of our intentions, the summe of our indeavors, the strength of all our actions to be vanitie; how ³⁵ can it then, but leave ³⁶ an impresion in our harts, that we are neerest vnto happiness, when we are furthest off from them; I meane the vaine intentions of this world, the fruitles labors & indeavors ³⁷ that they ³⁸ move, from w^{ch} nothing soe faithfully ³⁹ delivers vs as the crosses & afflictions that we meet. those mastering checks & contraventions, that like torrents ⁴⁰ breake all outward hopes! Naie this-speculation of the vanitie of this world, does not onlie shew a happiness in those crosses by the exemption w^{ch} we gaine; but infers a further benefitt in that by a neerer contemplation of our selves; of what we doe consist,

The underment^d words &c. are written, & erased or semi erased.

³⁰ "therein."

³¹ "so the stronger."

³² "to."

³³ "still."

³⁴ "scheme."

³⁵ "w^{ch} cannot."

³⁶ "this."

³⁷ "in her busines."

³⁸ "give."

³⁹ "does."

⁴⁰ "bear downe all our."

what originall we had, to what end we were directed; & in this we see whose image is vpon vs, to whom we doe belong, what materialls we are off; that, besides the bodie (w^{ch} only is obnoxious to these troubles) the better part of our composition is the soule, whose freedome is not subject to anie authoritie wthout vs, but depends wholly on the disposition of the Maker, who framd it for himselfe, & therefore gave it substance incompatible of all power & dominion but his owne. this happinefs I confesse in all the trialls I have had has never parted from me (how great then is his favor by whose⁴¹ mercie I have enioy'd it!) the daies have all seem'd pleasant, noe night has once beene tedious; noe fears, noe terrors have possesed me, but a constant peace & tranquility of the minde, whose agitation has beene cheiflie in thanks & acknowledgment to him,⁴² by whose grace I have subsisted, & shall yet I hope participate of his blessings vpon y^e. I have the more enlargd myself in this that y^e might have a right veiwe of⁴³ the condition w^{ch} I suffer least⁴⁴ from a⁴⁵ "bye relation, as through a perspective not truly representinge, some false sence might be contracted. Neither could I thinke that altogeather vnusefull for yo^r knowledg w^{ch} may afford y^e both precept & example. Consider it, weigh it⁴⁶ duly & wher y^e finde a signe or indication of⁴⁷ some error,

The underment^d words, &c. are written, & erased or semi erased.

⁴¹ "grace," erased.
mercies

⁴² erased illegibly.

⁴³ "my."

⁴⁴ "by relation."

⁴⁵ "strange."

⁴⁶ "well through."

⁴⁷ "well through."

make it⁴⁸ an instruction⁴⁹ how to avoid the like: if ther appeer, but the resemblance of, some virtue, suppose it better, & make it a president for y^rselves: wher y^a meet the prints & footsteps of the Almightye, magnifie the⁵⁰ goodnes of his providence & mercie that makes such lowe descents: consider that ther is a nature turnes all⁵¹ sweetnes into venome, where⁵² from the bitterest hearbe the bee extracts a honie. industrie & the habit of the⁵³ sowle give the effect & operation vnto all things; & that to one seemes barren & vnpleasant, to another is made fruitfull & delightsome: even in this by y^r application & indeavor, I am confident may be found both pleasure & advantage. it comes only as a testimony (& soe y^a must accept it, the time yeelding noe other waie of demonstration) of my Love,⁵⁴ & by this exprefion know that I dayly praie for y^r happines & felicity as the cheife subiect of my wishes, & shall make my continuall supplications to the Lord; that from the riches of⁵⁵ his mercie he will⁵⁶ geve y^a such influence of his graces; as y^r blessing & prosperity,⁵⁷ may satisfie, & enlarge, the hopes, & comforts of

y^r most affectionat ffather

Tower. 3^o Julij 1629

[Endorsed]

3^o Julij 1629

To my sonns.

The underment^d words, &c. are written, & erased or semi erased.

⁴⁸ "your." ⁴⁹ "for y^rselves." ⁵⁰ "power." ⁵¹ "the."

⁵² "the." ⁵³ "minde." ⁵⁴ "in wch." ⁵⁵ "whose mercie."

⁵⁶ "soe power vpon y^a the." ⁵⁷ "& blessing."

30. SIR JOHN ELIOT TO RICHARD KNIGHTLEY, ESQ.,
M.P., 17th August, 1629.

"Writing again to Knightley on the 17th of August, when his friend had sent another special messenger to him, indications escape him of a misgiving, for which afterwards there will appear to have been too much reason, as to the terms that might be proposed hereafter to accompany bail; and incidentally he illustrates the continued restrictions put upon his intercourse with his fellow-captives. It is only by sending round to their various lodgings in the Tower, Knightley's servant himself, that he can obtain the means of answering his friend's questions as to their health." (Forster, ii. 503.) It makes one's blood hot to-day to realize that a creature so imbecile and worthless as the King should have had it in his power thus arbitrarily to lengthen out and aggravate the imprisonment of such a man. It only deepens the pathos of his meek submissiveness as in preceding letters.

S^a

having an oportunity p'sented¹ by yo^r servant I cannot but giue yo^a some remembrance of the affections I reteyne & the great impresions they have taken from the evidence of y^r favo^r. had we any thinge heer worth yo^r reception, it should be my happines to convey it; and what concernes our selues (thogh of lesse moment) had it any late occurrences yo^a know not; I should presume yett to mention it as an entertainment for² your leasure. I thanke God we doe all heer inioy our healthes, soe much your meffenger doth asure me, who giues it me in the rela^cōn

¹ "vnto me," erased.

² "some," erased.

of his visits, & we daily have examples of the great providence that p̄tectes vs. ther appeares noe signe of alteracōn in our state, or an openinge yett to liberty vnlesse it be in such waies as I hope we shall not take it; but we know ther is that will effect it in due tyme. the best intelligence we have, is, that for the present we are vtterly forgotten, wth celsacion happily may settle the humo^r that were stir'd & then it maie be althings will returne vnto their temper. however we shall^s awayte his leasure that sustaines vs, to whome (as I am confident we have the competitions of o^r frends) we shall dailie offer our deuotions, as for our selues, for them; & that there may be^t some influence of his mercies yett to p̄serue the happinesse of the Kingdome w^{ch} consists in that truth we have profest & is incompatible of all impurity or mixture. These desires I am sure cannot want yo^r helpe goeing the waie of heaven, wth w^{ch} you are soe well acquainted, mine likewise shall earnestly attend you both in this and all things else that maie expresse me to be

yo^r faithfull frend & brother

August 17^o 1629.

[Endorsed] 17^o August. 1629.

To Mr. Knightly.

^s "sustaine," erased.

^t "such," erased.

39. SIR JOHN ELIOT TO HIS FATHER-IN-LAW :

August 15th, 1629.

As before, breathing the warmest regard, and grateful for tidings of himself and "the little ones."

S^r

it is noe small comfort to me to hear of yo^r health wth all the litle ones & when againe I maie have oportunitie to see yo^r I shall abound in happines. I have written to Hill to bringe vpp my tow eldest sonnes hither wth him at Michaelmas from whence they shall goe to the vniversitie wherther is a place pvided & a tuto^r in whose care¹ I shall have great asurance. when they remove from Tiverton I desire Ned maie go there in their roome, whose losse of tyme does greive me; & I confesse to me the p^rjudice seemes soe great as hardlie can be recompens^t. I hope god will² blesse him wth his Groweth, to overcome the defluxion in his eyes, against w^{ch} I see noe practise does p^rvaile: however it's but a p^t and not as precious as the whole & therefore that first must be intended. I praie god to blesse him wth all his brothers & sisters that they maye be helps & comforts vnto you & by their dutie and obedience expressing that thankfullnes and gratitude wth yo^r favo^r have deserv'd wherein my interests are double both for my self

¹ "in whose care," repeated & erased.

² a word here erased.

and them w^{ch} I shalbe ever carefull to acknowledge as an
obligacōn that must binde me both in ^o service & devotion
to remaine

yo^r most affectionate soninlaw

August 15^o, 1629.

[Endorsed] 15^o August 1629

To my ffather in law.

40. SIR JOHN ELIOT TO "M SMITHE:" August 15^o,
1629.

Unhappily this member of the vast Smith family is unknown.
Evidently he has been moving to secure the 'liberty' of the great
prisoner. To his friend, however, "Stone Walls did not a prison
make," and he could not leave even 'the Tower' except in integrity
of conscience.

S^a

Amongst many other your favours I maie not for-
gett to thanke you for your last remembrance, w^{ch} besides
the afsurance of yo^r love, importinge an intelligence of
your health in that respect was welcome. we have noe
news to geve yo^a & if we had I know you would not now
expect it. our condiçōn here reteynes the same state it had,
but it maie [be] the influence of your wishes does soe farr
worke vppon it as erelonge it maie have alteracōn: how

^o "your," erased.

II.

K

ever I p'sume you⁴ have that confidence of yo^r frend, that the desire of liberty cannott move him to such hast as might make him leave either his discretion, or honestie behinde him; but that his evening & his mornings shalbe one. & as in this, soe to you I shall still make good what I have p'fest, to be

yo^r true frend.

August 15^o
1629.

[Endorsed] 15^o August 1629

To M^r Smithe.

41. RICHARD JAMES, B.D., TO SIR JOHN ELIOT: about
September, 1629.

In the Introduction to my collected edition (for the first time) of the Works of this eminent Scholar and noticeable Poet, I give a full account of his friendship with Eliot. There were constant 'hopes' of release that were as constantly doomed to disappointment by some new artifice or pretext on the part of the King, who had all the treacherous cruelty and dexterity of a monkey towards all to whom he once became enemy.

Deere Sir John Eliott, if you comme not forth, after my returne from Canterburie I shalbe glad to finde out somme books to entertaine your leasure. now you are to receive Cardan whoe hath somme things of worthie con-

⁴ "want" erased.

sideration. and Lipsius de Constantia, which peradventure you wilbe pleasd once more to reade and learne whether in the writing of it, he did not then meditate flight from the Hollanders side and with a whininge philosophie attempt a defense of the Spaniards oppression, from fate, providence, necessitie remonstrance of greater tyrannies in auncient time, and by a wicked elevating the naturall affection which everie true free harte must beare to his owne Countrey, which defect as I haue otherwhere shewed out of Boccalini, caused mainly by the Roman superstition is and hath binne a great cause of the miseries which haue befallen Christian Commonwealths: This of Lipsius I did imagine before I ever read him; and if you finde not my conjecture true, yet there be many antique peeces in him, which may please a second or third readinge. so with my heart blefsing your purposes I rest

Your faithfull servant

RICH: JAMES.

[In pencil] About Sept. 1629.

[Endorsed] Mr. James.

42. SIR JOHN ELIOT TO "MR. TREIFE:"

17th October, 1692.

Good Mr. Geddy, his father-in-law, is dead. In little more than a month after the letter of August 15th he died. "The circumstances are not known to us beyond the suddenness, and the sad increase of trouble to the imprisoned Eliot at the thought of his

children doubly fatherless by loss of that second home." (Forster, ii. 499.) At this crisis this Mt. Treife interposed as a friend, and infinitely touching is the broken language of the prisoner to him.

S^a

Yo^a must giue me leave, to take a fitter tyme then in imprisonment to pay those thanks I owe yo^a for the many courtesies I have¹ had: however the acknowledgm^t shalbe² always, though the satisfaccōn be defer'd. Vppon the inteligence by Abraham of the death of my fatherinlaw (haveing noe³ light given of his affaiers, but what was contain'd in a copie of his will) I⁴ delay'd awhile my writeing to yo^a in expectation of Hill by whome I p'sum'd to have had some larger⁵ knowledge. There are manie things I want to instruct me, for a direction of that nature: the busines consists of⁶ divers parts & must turne by⁷ severall wheeles. the interests yo^a know are many, in right⁸ in equitie for the p'sent, for the tyme to come, wherein the intention of the donor must be clearly vnderstood, & the feoffees he has trusted how they doe apprehende it, that there maie be a generall concurrence & consent in the orders & disposicōns that⁹ shall follow. I meet wth manie difficulties¹⁰ in the exprefions of the will w^{ch} I desire maie be resolved,¹¹ before I adventure on pticu-

The underment^d words, &c. are written & cancelled.

1 "receay'd." 2 "now, though the." 3 "knowledg."

4 "defer'd." 5 "informacon." 6 "several parts."

7 "divers." 8 "and." 9 "might."

10 "w^{ch} before I ingag'd myself pticularly."

11 "because the exprefions in the will are doubtfull."

lars, as what tyme is meant by yeares of discretion, when the lands shalbe convey'd, & then in the Conveyance of the inheritances whether the present portions were to passe. ¹² & the mother had shee liv'd, must have stood at the curtesie of her children. these ¹³ doubts ¹⁴ w^{ch} for hast I thus shortly have propounded y^e will ¹⁵ easily vnderstand vpon the recollection of those conferences w^{ch} ¹⁶ in this pointe formerly we have had, & therin ¹⁷ I must crave a little explication ¹⁸ from y^e knowledg before I enter further whose sence heerin must be my direction: ¹⁹ of which advise me as speedilie as y^e may, & I will in the meane time heer indeavor the prevention of all p^riudice. ther are somethings ²⁰ in the Country carefully to be intended in w^{ch} I can give noe p^rticular directions having yet noe knowledge or information for my self, but as generally in all I must therin depend vpon y^e help. as for the paym^t of rents for Treburesey Thorne & others wherin as I have ²¹ learnt formerly from my ffatherinlaw, ²² it stands vpon the danger of a forfeiture, & to me y^e know ther wilbe no aspect of favor, what the rents are & how payable I know not, but I pray vse y^e care heerin to cleer it from that hafard, & to ²³ secure vs by a speedie satisfaction.

The underment^d words, &c. are written & cancelled.

¹² "yo^e knowe in that case."

¹³ "short."

¹⁴ "y^e will the better vnderstand."

¹⁵ "the better vnderstand."

¹⁶ "heerin."

¹⁷ "before I enter further on the worke."

¹⁸ "before I adventure further y^e sence."

¹⁹ "& therefore I pray in these."

²⁰ "ther that are."

²¹ "heard."

²² "that."

²³ "give it."

I did presume vpon the diligence of Hill before his coming vp that he would have entreated y^r help to have taken an exact inventorie of all the stocke abroad, & for the care & p^rservation therof to have settled some p^rsent order & direction; y^a know what reason I have to thinke all things are not too well, & I am sure the more wee delay the search ²⁴ if ther be corruption the more hard twill be to cure it. I pray in y^r great respects to me (for w^{ch} I shall ever be y^r debtor) make some reflection vpon this & at y^r leasure cast a little eye vpon it; I should be glad likewise for y^r ease & to decline the envye ²⁵ of those persons who I beleeeve have noe great affection to y^a, if y^a could gaine sometimes the assistance of M^r. Cocke. I am hopefull of his readines in regard of ²⁶ his great ²⁷ acquaintance wth my ffather in law, & if y^a please therfore to move him in my name, ²⁸ tell him wthall I the sooner doe desire it ²⁹ to renew ³⁰ for my self the ³¹ like interests of frindship. y^a see S^r. how like a flood of trouble I power my self vpon y^a & that y^r ³² willingness in some ³³ is made an overture & occasion for more. I pray pardon it &, though the iniurie be too great in him that cannot meritt it, let not y^r goodness be discouraged from this exercise of ³⁴ charitye. it is a large

The underment^d words are written & erased or cancelled.

²⁴ "the worse we shall discern the steps that ^{30e} before vs." ^{30e} went

²⁵ "it may cause y^a from him that."

²⁶ "the."

²⁷ "friendship."

²⁸ "assure him."

²⁹ "because."

³⁰ "to."

³¹ "same assurance of his."

³² "readines to."

³³ "does but give makes but."

³⁴ "charitye, for y^a know it is soe to a prisoner it has so many charities in it."

b'fitt [benefit] to a prisoner, & has so many other pieties that it cannot be vnrewarded." though ther should be "a generall ingratitude in men" heaven will requite it & yet my thanks "shall" never faile, w^{ch} I shall "witness daily by my praiers, & when I may have opportunity for more I shalbe in nothing wanting to the full satisfaction of that debt. ffor my children I have written to "y^r wife, who has beene soe kinde a "frinde vnto them. I am so much beholding to y^a both as I can hardly iudge who has the greater obligation, but the severall ingagem^{ts} are so stronge as they "will ever binde me "to be

Y^r most faithfull frinde

To M^r Treife

october 17th 1629

though I have not opportunitye to give the least requitall to y^r favors, or hardly time " (such as wth saftie I may vse) to reckon the pticulars, yet my "acknowledgm^t I must pay w^{ch} never can be wanting & for thes, now, your acceptance I must "crave. the great love "y^a have exprest

The underment^d words are written & erased or cancelled.

²⁶ "& though I can now promise nothing for my selfe I have nothing now for returne." ²⁸ "an vnthankfulnes."

²⁷ "god will yet."

²⁹ "y^a."

³⁰ receive

"not be wanting."

⁴⁰ "render."

⁴¹ "M^r Treife."

⁴² "neighbour to."

⁴³ "will, must
shall."

⁴⁴ "to both."

⁴⁵ "to reckon them or accompt them would I number."

⁴⁶ "thanks &."

⁴⁷ "pray."

⁴⁸ "w^{ch}."

vpon my children, the helps & advantages y^e have given them, the " cares & respects y^e " daily vse, w^{ch} render y^e even in the nature of a mother to them, make me so much y^e debtor, that if all my indeavors were at liberty & imploid in y^e service only I must confesse they " would come short of satisfaction : " however I desire the continuance of that favour, that if ther be any thing amiss y^e direction may reforme it & though I deserve it not y^e owne goodness will reward it. all the little ones I purpose god willing to leave wth their Mistris wher they " are, but my daughter Bess I will provide " for heer & about Candlemas I hope to have her vp." I know they wilbe much " ioyed wth companie of y^e daughter Mary at Trebursey, & Polwheele will take the like care of her as " of the rest. I pray leave her wth them " as a figure of your presence & for an occasion to make y^e visitts the more often, & soe wth the most affectionat remembrance of my thanks & love I rest .

Y^r afsur'd frinde

To M^r Treife

octobr. 17th 1629.

[Endorsed] 27th octobr. 1629.

To M^r Treife & his wife.

The underment^d words &c. are written & erased or cancelled.

" " frequent care continuallie."

" " shew towards."

" " could not geve y^e."

" " I must notwithstanding intreat."

" " now."

" " a place."

" " if ther be any thing wanting for them their goods M^r Treife give y^e direction to have it provided."

" " comforted."

" " she doea."

" " that."

43. SIR BEVILL GRENVILLE TO SIR JOHN ELIOT:

November 26th, 1629.

Delusive hopes still of release, in forgetfulness that Eliot could accept no personal liberty at the expense of the 'freedom of debate' in the House of Commons, and responsibility alone to it. Holles has also—complicd.

DEAREST S^r

While I am deprived of my¹ great happines, the seeing you; it will be my next, to heare from you, y^t you ar well. w^{ch} I covetuously desire, & shall ever pray for, as a Publick good. I know the unfittnes of the² time for any Copiousnes to passe between vs, & therefore will use none. only I begg to know, (as my greatest Cordiall,) whither ther be yett any more hope, of so great a blessing, as the seeing you shortly in the west. it is not fitt to say more, as I cannot be quiet wthout saying something . farewell, & love him, y^t will live & dye

Y^r faithfulest frend

& servant

BEVILL GRENVILLE.

Cheeswike

Novemb. 26. 1629.

My best service I pray³ remeber to y^r two noble¹ "great," erased.² "unfittnes of the," repeated & erased.³ "pray," repeated & erased.

Consorts, whose well being, I shall no lesse pray for, then y^r.

The Noble Master of this house, kisses y^r hands; then whom, you have not an honester nor truer Frend.

44. SIR JOHN ELIOT TO SIR BEVILL GRENVILE:
November 26th, 1629.

Holles has gone from 'the Tower,' and not 'two consorts,' but only one is left. How magnanimous the silence—not for the first time, on such foraking.

S^a

if I could make an agreem^t & reconciliation betweene my power & will, I should instead of these retorne my selfe for answeare. My readinesse to serve yo^a I p^rsume cannott be in question, and my affection to be wth yo^a carries too much reason to be doubted; the times onelie are malevolent, and because I am not worthie, will not admitt mee to that happines. my desires & wishes shall attend yo^a in yo^r iourney (as the like services yo^a have from my consorte in captivitie) while yo^a remaine wth yo^r noble frind; whose yo^a nowe are, my better part waites on yo^a: when yo^a are travelling, my affection still muste followe yo^a; when that trouble is at end and yo^a arrive at the p^rsence of yo^r La: (that center both of yo^r felicitie & rest) there shall I likewies meete yo^a intentionallie making an acknowledgem^t of that debte to w^{ch} soe manie favo^r have oblig^d mee, and noe libertie is graunted

for satisfaccion but my thancks, too slighthe a retribution for
soe much excellence of meritt. I have noe other paym^t
but the rep^sentation of my service; for that noe argu-
ment can asure mee of acceptance but yo^r charitie, yet,
experience makes mee confident as I have found yo^r manie
demonstrations to

Yo^r Servante

J. E.

Novembr 26^o

1629

[Endorsed] 26 Novembr 1629

To M^r Grenville.

45. A DISCHARGE OR RECEIPT FOR 'REIOYNDER,'
WHATEVER THAT MEANT.

Receiued of M^r Valentine S^r John Elliott^e Reioynder
the last of November about sixe of the Clocke.

p me Jeffrie Wathouse clerke to
M^r Elfyng.

46. JOHN HAMPDEN TO SIR JOHN ELIOT: Dec^r 8th
1629.

The Paper on the 'Project for New England: for Mr. Hamp-
den,' or as it is further entitled, "The grounds of settling a Plan-
tation in New England: Objections, and replies thereto," is preserved

in the Correspondence of Eliot. It was doubtless the composition of the famous Governor Winthrop, whose lineal descendant has carefully printed the MS. This renders it inexpedient to give it in this collection. The opening reference of the present letter from Hampden is to the transference of Eliot from the Tower to the Marshalsea, and therein an assumed relaxation of the imprisonment.

NOBLE S^a

I hope this letter is conveyed to you by so safe a hand y^t yoⁿ will be y^e first y^t shall open it, or if not, yet since you inioy as much as without a contradiction you may y^e liberty of a prison it shall be no offence to wish you may make y^e best vse on't, y^t God may find you as much his ¹ now you inioy y^e benefitt of secondary helpes, as you found hime yoⁿ while by deprivation of all others you were cast vpon his immediate support. This is all I haue or ame willing to say, but y^t y^e paper of considerations concerning y^e plantation might be very safely conveyed to mee by this hand & after transcribing should be as safely returned if you vouchsafe to send ² it mee. I beseech you present my service to M^r Valentine M^r Long my countryman if with you, & lett mee be honored wth y^e stile of

yo^r faithfull frend & servant
JO: HAMPDEN.

Hampden

Decemb^r. 8th. [1629].

¹ "while," erased.

² "y^e," erased.

47. CAPT THOMAS GODFREY TO SIR JOHN ELIOT :
December 9th, 1629.

Mingled piety and anxiety give us a fine idea of this always steadfast friend. How many evidences emerge of the peril of correspondence of even this innocent type !

NOBLE S^r

the hope I had of a more conuenient messenger, hathe beene the cause of my not wrightinge before this, and now I chuse rather to sende this waye then be suspected of necklecte to soe worthie a ffreinde as yo^r selfe, whome I soe more loue, then anie man breathinge, and for whom I soe intreat the Lorde for, as for my selfe ; It is a thinge that God is verie well pleased wth, that his Children shöld be earnest wth him, one for an other, as well as for themselues. I haue had sweete triall of it latelie, by a dangerous sicknes my wyfe hath had, suche an one as there was cause to feare, the Lord woulde haue taken her to his mercie, as beinge too good for the world to enioie anie longer, w^{ch} caused manie a good praire to be sente vp to heauen in her behalfe, w^{ch} I am verilie perswaded was verie preualent ; These and manie other trialls the lorde hathe for his Children (as Imprisonment, & suche like) to bringe them neerer to himself, like a louinge father Chastisinge his Children to make them better, all w^{ch} I doe asure my selfe you doe finde by experience in yo^r self, from those manie trialls you haue had of God his fauor in this kinde,

for the Increase wherof, and that you maye continue in
soe doinge I shall hartelie praye for and euer reste.

Yo^r moste faythfull freind and Seruant

THO: GODFREY.

My wyfe dothe rememb^r
her respecte to you.

Grantham

Decemb^r 9 1629.

48. SIR JOHN ELIOT TO JOHN HAMPDEN: 10^a
December, 1629.

Few things are more satisfying than the unbroken friendship between these two illustrious men. Forster (ii. 532, onward and *passim*) is kindled into enthusiasm over it.

S^a

your letters have a greate vertue, and importe such
varietie of happines (besides the significations of your health
& love) in your counsell & example; that it makes a de-
gree of libertie to have them, and in that geves p^rdition &
p^rpara^on to more. As I am bound to vse that p^rportion
shalbe graunted mee in retribution and acknowledgement,
to his honor that conferrs it in chiefe; In the next place
likewies I shalbe gladd to imploy it in your service as a con-
fession of yo^r merittes, w^{ch} have soe greate an obligation on
mee, that noe comaund or opportunitie can be neglected or
refused. The papers yo^r requir'd I have sent, written as
hastelie, as I beleve they were compos'd. I have had noe

leisure to examine them, and of the first copie made but one shorte & supfiell viewe, wherein (thoughe I had little satisfacōn) I dare not make a censure, but when they returne if they appeare worthie, I shalbe bould to render my opinion. In the meane time having nothing els of w^{ch} I dare communicate, my affections being wholie yo^r by a former disposition, kising yo^r handes I reſte

Yo^r most faithfull frend

J. E.

Dec. x^{mo}. 1629

M^r Hampden.

[Endorsed] Decemb^r x^{mo} 1629

to M^r Hampden

49. SIR JOHN ELIOT TO RICHARD KNIGHTLEY :
10th December, 1629.*

Very pleasant is this loving and gracious acknowledgment of his kindness and a present of game. He is now permitted to attend Church, it will be seen.

S^r

your letter & presente came at such a time as I was then p^rvented of my answeare, the meſſenger meet-

* A private unimportant letter to "M^r Pullen," being printed by Forster (ii. 535/6), that follows this, is not given here.

inge mee on thursday morninge, as I was going to the Lecture at S^t Mary Overyes, and his hast such, as hee could not staie an hower for my retorne. it shalbe I hope, noe p^riudice to this office, that I lost that opportunitie; and for the acceptance of yo^r token, if the asurance be not full in that it comes from yo^r, the dispatch & vsage then shall shewe it, wth both my fellowe prisoners & other frind^e can wittnes. I cannott saie they have bene an occasion of yo^r remembraunce wth never is forgotten but an¹ expresion of yo^r favour, wth challenges a thanckes, and those I am comaunded liberallie to geve yo^r.

Yo^r Counsell and example wth Watt Long p^rvailes farr for charitie, and hee purposes nowe to resolve his iealosie into some other termes that maie be compatible wth that virtue, caution and circumspec^{ti}on maie be graunted to such a² measure as makes vp the compleat armour of Solomon, these onelie hee^{le} retaine for strengthning & securitie, wthout admission of anie thing that maie weaken or divide, wherein hee p^rsumes on yo^r allowance & consente. I shall not neede to interpose in this question, nowe the reconciliation is soe neere. I find on his part a cleere intention to agreem^t, a remission of eu^eye attribute that's ill, and a retention onelie of the contrarie, to wth I knowe yo^r readilie will concurr, and soe wthout anie difficultie or help, the composition is made p^rfecte. I have nothing to add to this but my wishes for the confirmation of yo^r both. my

¹ "occasion," erased.

² a word here erased.

praiers doe ever followe yo^r, and in that vntill I maie have
other opportunities, I can onelie shew my self

Yo^r frind & servante

J. E.

Dec x^{mo} 1629

M^r Knightlie

[Endorsed] Decemb^r x^{mo} 1629

to M^r Knightlie.

50. SIR OLIVER LUKE TO SIR JOHN ELIOT : 28^o
December, 1629.

'Christmas cheer' is sent to the prisoner in the Marshalsea.
Grave and weighty and ominous are the words looking forward to
'the end.' All these Puritans were men !

NOBLE AND DEERE FRENDE

Thoughe I well knowe that a good cause and in-
nocencye are excellentt preservatyves bothe for the in-
warde and outwarde man yett because I likewayes knowe
that the varyouse perplexytyes that accompanye troubles w^t
the indysposition of place and seasons maye endanger
healthe (w^{ch} is all my feare) I canott but make this in-
queste, hoping I shall receave the wyshed for returne of
your well doeing, asuringe my selfe your eye hath beene
constantly sett uppon the beste end of all troubles (w^{ch} is to
growe better,) and therefore now my only care is of that
lytell thynn Carkase, nothinge doubting but that god that

II.

M

hathe in mercye vouchsafed proteccion hetherto will goe through w^t the work for w^{ch} I shall dayly pray, beinge all I can doe; I myght be large in the expreſſions of my cares and feares but that were but to goe farr aboutt to demonstratt that w^{ch} maye truly be concluded in these fewe wordes that I am in all thinges affectionattly and faythefully yours: nowe gyve me leave to presentt to you and yours these the cuntry Lumber, wherin you maye behold small demonstrations of large affection. I desyre to be remembred to all those w^t m^r Seldon and Stroude as you have opportunitye, what you think fytt ether concerninge your partyculars or the generall I pray lett me neare, for newes will be a welcom new year gyfte, and so dear frends receive the reall and affectionatt love of

Your

OL: LUKE.

I pray tell Watt Longe I desyre to knowe howe he nowe lykes Demurrs and Ben Vall. that I studdy hard to counsayle him safely.

H

28 of December

51. SIR JOHN ELIOT TO SIR OLIVER LUKE:

Dec^r 31st, 1629.

There is a nimbus of sunshine in the prison from the kind remembrance of friends. Spite of continued wrong and suffering, Eliot abides tranquil. He is permitted to attend Church. How despicable

beside his genuine piety the nauseous religious phrasing of the King as the martyr-King, whose habitual 'bawdy talk' brought indignant blushes to 'fair women' and 'brave men,'—as the Sidney Papers attest undeniably.

S^a

haveing, at best, noe satisfacōn but my thanks for the great obligacōn yo^a have on me, I am now soe strait'ned by the tyme in all libertye of expression, that I might dispaire of pdone; if yo^r charity did not helpe me, w^{ch}, as the hopes of retribution are cutt shorter, still multiplies your favo^r, as if y^r object only were the demonstration of it selfe. in evidence of that I have now receav'd the¹ large p'sent you have sent, of w^{ch} to enumerate the pticulars, were almost to come, in some degree to merritt it. it has a happie acceptance of all those to whom I know you likewise did intende it, and some extension further then yo^r meaninge in respect of M^r Selden & my countri-man, whoe beinge now removd from their pallace in the tower, to their countrie howse in Southwarke are both ptakers of that, & your remembrance, w^{ch} seemes soe auspicious to that litle libertie they have gotten, as they take it for a p'diction of more. they came² hither by the like writt as we did, granted vpon a motion only of their Solicitor & are now in the same termes wth vs vpon the pointe of good behaviour attending the discretion of the Judges. we are at quiett, troubled wth noe newes of alteracōn: our suits stand in the³ Condiōn that yo^a lefte

¹ "laste," erased.

² "came," repeated & erased.

³ "same" erased.

them. M^r Valentine against all accidents is fortified by your Counsell: nothing cann deterr him nothinge cann remove him. M^r Long still affects the opinion of demurrers before answears. but in cond'censon to the reason of the tymes, he now p^rfers silence vnto them both. they all command me to a large presentation of their service, wth w^{ch} & the acknowledgment of my debt I Conclude my selfe⁴

Your most faithfull frend

J. E.

I praie rep^rsent my hüblé service to your ladie.

vlt. Decembris 1629.

[Endorsed] vlt decemb^r 1629.

To S^r Oliver luke.

52. JOHN HAMPDEN TO SIR JOHN ELIOT. January 4th, 1629/30 (mis-dated 1628/9, by Forster, ii. 534)-

"The hour in which he read this letter was perhaps the happiest Eliot yet had known in his imprisonment." (Forster, ii. 534.) His sons are guests at Hampden. The 'papers' are those concerning New England, as before.

S^a.

If my affections could be so dull as to giue way to a sleepy excuse of a letter: yet this bearer o^f cōmon friend

⁴ "your most," erased.

had power to awaken them, & commaund it, to¹ ye publique experience of whose worth in doing, I can now adde my private of his patience in suffring y^e iniuries of a rough hewen intertainm^t: to be² tolerated³ by the addition of yo^r sonnes company: of whome if euer you liue to see a fruite answerable to y^e promise of y^e present blofsomes, it will be a blefsing of y^e weight as will turne y^e scale against all worldly afflictions & denominate yo^r life happy. I returne yo^r papers wth many thanks: wth I have transcribed, not readd. y^e discourse therefore vpon y^e subiect must be reserved to another season: when I may wth better opportunity & freedome communicate my thoughts to you my friend. till then wth my salutations of all yo^r society, & prayers for yo^r health I rest

Yo^r euer assured friend & servant

JO: HAMPDEN.

Hampden

Jan. 4th

53. EDWARD KYRTON, M.P., BEDWIN, TO SIR JOHN ELIOT. 16^o January, 1629/30.*

A fine 'old English gentlemen,' quaint and blunt of speech, but full of all tenderness of love for Eliot was this Kyrton.

¹ "whose," erased.

² "no," erased.

³ several words erased.

* Another note to "Mr Pullen" follows here: given in Forster, ii. 535/6. Both show the interest Eliot took in his humblest dependents.

Sir

you being att soe good Leasure and the goodnēs of your dispositions such, that I knowe to heare from those that truely loues you : you wilbe glad of : of which number I being one I haue written this and by it doe assure you that noe man can be more readie and willing to doe you any seruice that a true freind can doe then my selfe. doe not thinke this complement for I hate it :/ our cōuntry is very Barren of any newes : we liue quiett and are senceable of nothing but that which is vpon them and no longer : att London you haue all and knowe all but are more vncertaine than we are heire. I am glad to heare one thing that M^r Coriton being one of the wicked is fallen into grace and kyssed the Kinges hande with the addition of his place againe : it is some hope for vs that yf we can gett soe good Angells to plead for vs and my Lord Powis to sweare hard, we may all haue grace enough : I will conclude with a desire to heare from you and howe all thinges are with you for it will much quicken me in this dull stupide cōuntry. I onely am reuiued with the knowledge of some good men and that I am

Your deuoted freind and seruant

EDW. KYRTON.

Euston this xvth
of January.

the towne Earles remembers their loues vnto you and drinks vnto you euery meale.

I pray remember vnto M^r Long and M^r Valintine and tell M^r Long that by the next he shall heare from me.

54. SIR JOHN ELIOT TO RICHARD KNIGHTLEY.

Feb. 2^d, 1629/30.S^r

yo^r last letter I receav'd but by whome it came, or how long a p'gresse it had made I know not: it wanted date, and came accidentally to my hands soe as I have nothing Certaine wth it but your love, the best & of all the most welcome intelligence. you maie not impute it to a slownes that I write not often, the asuſſance y^e have in me I hope will excuse that. conveyances are vncertaine & papers noe good Secretaries for these times; my hart, & affection y^e have alwaies, more I have not vsefull, vnlesse it be some service in this Sphear, to wth now my motions are Confin'd, wherein when y^e shall † geve the occasion I shall shew a readinesse vnlimitted. y^r frends heer are all well, & p'sent their service to y^e. our prayers doe ffollow yo^r & are Continuall intercesso^r for your happinesse, in wth my sacrifice is not wantinge but has the dailie incense of a

ffaithfull frend & Brother

J. E.

ffebr. 2^d 1629M^r Knightley[Endorsed] 2^d febr. 1629To M^r Knightley

† "shew," crased.

55. SIR JOHN ELIOT TO EDWARD KYRTON.

Feb. 12^o, 1629.S^a

As yo^r letter gave me a great happinesse in the significacōn of your love, soe it has been some occasion to me of regret, that it tooke me in such tymes as I had not readilie a leasure, to expresse part of my affections, w^{ch} move not more naturallie to any thinge then to the answere and Correspondence of your love. This is the first opportunitie I have had, and I need not tell you how it comes to be a leasure, your servant can relate it. I am now freed from the tedious attendance of Co^{ts} & Cou^{ssell} & am passinge againe¹ to the observance only of my selfe, in w^{ch} what intentions may import shalbe dedicated to yo^r. I pray rep^sent my humble service to those mirrors of Nobilitie, & tell them that even in darkenes I shall follow them wth honor and admiration, & that nothings shall effect a p^rvarication of my hart w^{ch} to you likewise shall Continue me as I am profest

yo^r faithfull frend

J. E.

febr. xij^o 1629.[Endorsed] febr. xij^o 1629To M^r Kirton¹ "only," semi erased.

56. SIR JOHN ELIOT : Feb. 15^o 1629/30 (without address).

Rather a historical statement than a letter, this MS. is marked by all Eliot's characteristics. Of course the 'large leisure' of the prison beguiled him into such lengths of writing. It is marvellous the tenacity with which he holds to principle and right. The Reader must consult the narrative of Forster for the facts and circumstances out of which this document sprang: (ii. 538-43 and onward.) More audacious shamelessness of injustice than the Judges' treatment of 'the case' is not possible to be conceived. The cowardice of the Judges who 'served' the King is sorrowful as it is infamous.

S^a

to satisfie your doubts vpon the late conclusion of our busines, and to shewe yo^a whether our Counsell or their Clientes have bene faultie, I shall geve yo^a a cleere relation of all passages in that point, and as farr as truth has power by a deduction of the time, dispell the mistes & cloudes of your intelligence. Being the firste *tuesdaie* in the terme overul'd in o^r plea to the iurisdiction of the Co^rt and putt to aunswere over, wee had the same daie a disability cast on vs by a comaundment from the Judges restraining vs to¹ o^r prisons, soe as wee had not² libertie³ to geve or take instructions from our Counsell. In this strait wee rested till the *nexte daye*, and soe loste the opportunitie of that time, when it seemes the Court considering the difficultie wee were in gave vs an enlargement, &

Januar 26

27^o¹ several words erased.² "the," erased.³ "of," erased.

II.

N

open'd vs a waie of possibilitie to endeavour the accomplishment of their order. Having receav'd this favour on the *wednesdaie* the *nexte day* wee address vs to our Counsell, and for preparation to the worke accordinge to the⁴ weight & consequence it imported, consulted in the generall what was the next expedient. In this, twoe considerations did arise, the satisfaction of the Court and the privilege of⁵ parliam' involv'd as yⁿ know in the meritts of our cause, and both those⁶ mutuallie resolv'd on : soe farr wee determin'd to geve satisfaction to the Coⁿ as mighte be wth out p^rjudice to the privilege of parl^t. And likewies wee intended wth the⁷ observation of that privilege in all dutie to endeavour the satisfac^on of the Court. much time was spent in this, for disquisition, for deliberation, and severall consultations wee had betweene our enlargement and the Sundaye wthout the intermision of a daie. Mondaye and tuesdaye our Counsell were ingag'd in the cause of m^r Longe and could not afford vs leisure till that busines was dispatcht, as they afterwards in⁸ a publicke narrative of that time made an accompte vnto the Judges. On the⁹ wednesdaie wee came againe to resollcitt them, and in seekinge them at Westminster (such as wee vs'd for preparation w^{ch}¹⁰ yⁿ know is not the worke of manie) in the morning found them attendinge in the Starchamber.

⁴ "worke," erased.

⁵ "were," erased.

⁶ words erased illegible.

¹⁰ several words erased.

⁸ "the," erased.

⁷ "pre," erased.

⁹ several words erased.

Vpon their dismission thence they againe resum'd our cause. And havinge renew'd the considerations that had past and ¹¹ the disquisitions recollected, they then desir'd that a generall meetinge might be had of all our Counsell at one place, that soe by a co[m]mon discussion & debate ¹² a conclusion might be hastned. wth this intente having parted wee were check't againe that nyght by a newe comaundement of restraints, and soe continued precluded of our libertie vntill sunday after. Sunday about noone wee had an order from the Court of a pemptorie daie p'fixt, that if wee pleaded not by tuesdaie there should be a iudgement vpon a nihil dicit geuen againste vs, in wth order likewies a rule for o^r libertie was included to geve vs acceffe vnto our Counsell. Vpon the receipte of this wee againe resorted to our Counsell whoe had bene in some wonder at our absence. and havinge made them acquainted wth the order (that beinge a ¹³ tyme more proper for devotion then for law) wee agreed ¹⁴ then onlie for the generall meetinge to be had on the next day followinge. The next daie beinge monday accordinge to that agreem^t the rest of our Counsell met at S^rieant Brampstons Chamber and there attended till seaven a clock at night but havinge loste that time and the S^rieant not come, in his absence and the latenesse beinge oppos'd to the greatnes & difficultie of the worke, they resolv'd for the p^rsent vpon a motion ¹⁵ to the Judges shewing the straitnesse they were in, and to desire a further

4° 5° 6°

7°

8°

¹¹ a word erased.¹² word erased.¹³ "time," erased.¹⁴ "agreed," erased.¹⁵ word erased.

febr 9^o

daie, that precipitation & immaturitie in their Counsell mighte not p*re*judice either their Clientes or themselues. This accordingelie was p*er*form'd, and for the cleerer satisfaction of the Co*ur*t a trewe deduction made of our diligence & attendance to that time, and therevpon the¹⁶ judgment was deferr'd¹⁷ & the order againe renewed for Thursdaie after. In conformitie to this wee forthwth labored the meetinge of our Counsell, wth in all were five¹⁸ (one havinge formerlie deserted vs). the greatest part wee had in readinesse & attended at the place, (the S*er*ientes chamber as before) the S*er*iant & m*r* Calthrop (twoe on whose iudgement wee especiallie relied) beinge away. failinge of them, and the whole daie beinge spent in expectation of their cominge, about seaven a clock wee parted wth the rest¹⁹ ingaging them by promise to meete againe the nexte daie followinge. that opportunitie beinge loste and soe much shortned of the tyme through the failinge of that Counsell, wee addrest o*f* selues vnto the Judges to exprese the diligence wee vs'd and to move them for a furtherance of the worke²⁰ that we might have a new Counsell then assign'd in his place that had deserted vs. The Lo. chief Justice was abroad (sittinge at the Guild hall²¹ as wee afterwards vnderstood by the publicke apologie of m*r* Calthrop & the S*er*iant in that pointe whoe were for other of their Clients then attending him) and in his absence wee went to Jus-

¹⁶ "order," erased.¹⁸ "wee," erased.²⁰ words erased.¹⁷ "till," erased.¹⁹ words erased.²¹ "vpon tryalls," erased.

tice Whitlock, whoe hearinge the relation of our²³ cares graunted the assignement of²⁴ the Counsell and appointed vs to attend²⁵ for the rule on the next morninge. The rule being had the wednesdaie wth the like diligence wee travail'd to²⁶ procure the meeting of our Counsell :²⁷ drewe them altogether at the former place, except the S^rieant & M^r Calthrop, waited for them longe till neere eighte a clocke at nighte, and in the end beinge againe disappointed of that help, wee were enforc't to presse the consideration²⁸ on the reste, whoe comparinge the difficultie of the cause wth the straitnesse of the time resolv'd for the p^rsent nothinge could be done, and in excuse of their client & themselues the next daie to geve the iudges a representation of their attendance, and to desire time till the next terme, there beinge of that but one daie more remayninge. This excuse wth some difficultie was receav'd, but noe hope of deferringe for the terme, yet a p^rsent consultation was admitted, and if in that o^r Counsell did shewe reasons whie they could not soe suddainelie dispatch, there was geven an intimation of some favour. for this wee retir'd into a corner of the Court of requestes, the beste place that time gave vs for a cause of²⁹ such importance, and there after a fewe considerations had bene rais'd were found soe manie difficulties that the Counsell all resolv'd speciall pleadinges muste be made, and those could not have soe short a pre-

ffabr 2ndxj^o²³ a word erased.- ²⁴ word erased.²⁵ word erased.²⁶ "gett," erased.²⁷ "meetinge," erased.²⁸ "of," erased.²⁹ "that," erased.

paration. Wth this aunsweare they retorn'd to geve satisfaction to the Co^t and againe preste for the nexte terme, but that could not be obtain'd, onelie wee had graunted a libertie till y^e morninge, and that before the Co^t sate wth an Iniuncōn on o^r Counsell in the meane time to attend vs. By this authoritie wee had o^r Counsell readie and a full meetinge in the afternoone, where after much agitation & debate some generall conclusions were accorded and these as heades geven vnto a Clerke for the p^rparation of the pleas. the Clerke thus instructed profest his diligence²⁰ to the worke but wthall told them in that time there was noe possibilitie to effecte it. And therevpon y^e Counsell ioyn'd in a resolution to make remonstrance to the Court what endeavour had bene vs'd, what difficulties they had found, howe farr they had concluded, what directions they had geven, and that wthout more time nothinge could be done; w^{ch} by waie of protestation they would offer for their Clients & themselues. Vpon this resolution wee parted about nyne a clocke at nighte, and from thence went p^rsentlie to the K^s Attorney to intimate soe much to him. from him wee went likewies to the Judges, and after attendance spake wth the Lo: Chiefe Iustice, made him the narration of our worke, and soe lefte the successe to his iudgemente & the Co^{rtes}. The next morninge againe as I heare (for I was not then present by reason of an indisposition²⁰ of my health contracted from cold & watching) our Counsell made their remonstrance to the Judges,

²⁰ a word erased.

²⁰ "of my bodie," erased.

shewed their diligence & pceedinges,³¹ drewe an attestation³² from the Clarke, whoe had acknowledged the instructions, told them what progresse hee had made and that by the eveninge hee did hope his p'parations would be readie, w^{ch} sooner could by noe meanes be dispatcht. This is the true Storie of our Labours,³³ and at this period wee were taken, wherein whether the fault were of our Counsell or o'selues yo^r wisdomes muste determyne, my partialtie & interestes excludinge me from³⁴ censure. I have bene too longe in this rela^{ti}on carriege all circumstances before mee but the advantage I have seene (even in great workes) drawne from little minutes, has geven this extension to my libertie that the whole course mighte be conspicuous to your viewe and soe the election freer on what to place yo^r³⁵ iudgment. our intentions I p'sume noe p'iudice can touch, beinge cleere from all obstructions, in all, moste readilie affectionate to the p'sent satisfaction, w^{ch} was vrg'd,³⁶ therby not impeaching the priviledge of parliamt and soe farr onelie³⁷ carefull of³⁸ the parliament as o^r duties to the³⁹ lawes and their⁴⁰ iust satisfaction did require. And thus havinge opened the true state & consistence of o^r cause beinge confident in your iustice I submitt it & rest

Yo^r frend & servante

J. ELIOT.

Feb: 15th 1629.

³¹ "made," erased.

³² a word erased.

³³ several words erased.

³⁴ to ⁴⁰ several words & passages erased.

57. SIR JOHN ELIOT TO SIR OLIVER LUKE.

Feby. 3^d, 1629/30.*S^r

what change I have had, in place, since y^e last sawe me, y^r meſſenger can relate: in affection, I presume y^e expect not, much leſſe doubt ther ſhould be any. if it were truly ſaid of thoſe, though meerly naturally, w^{ch} croſſe the ſeas in that reſpect, that they change the heavens only, not their mindes, it cannot be, to reaſons more then naturall, that ſuch motions of the body ſhould cauſe the leaſt commotion of the minde, or ſubiect it to any newneſſe or uncertainty. the ſupport I have ſtill found, does ſtill followe me: the experience it has given me, denies me now to doubt it, my confidence & tranquility in all degrees & places having the ſame meridian. the courſe I made hither was guided by the Attorney, the compaſſ that he ſteer'd by, the rule-booke only of the Clarkes (the iudgment not yet enter'd): his direction in that, wthout writt or warrant from the Judges, was the authority to the Maſhall, who thervpon commanding my attendance brought me¹ to this place, &, as a debt, w^{ch} formerly he had borrowed (to ſee his owne words) render'd me to the Leiſtenant, whoſe

* Forſter ſays (ii. 558) "a miſtake for 3^d March"—ſurely moſt improbable, as it is alſo ſo endorsed.

¹ "hither," erased.

prisoner I now am ; soe taken, & delivered in a complement. this is all the newes w^{ch} in our fortunes have occurr'd. I have nothing els to geve y^r but my thanks, w^{ch} as a tribute must be still answered for y^r favors by w^{ch} I am ingag'd

y^r most faithfull servant

J. E.

febr. 3^o

1629

S^r Oliver Luke.

[Endorsed] 3^o febr. 1629

to S^r Oliv. Luke.

58. EDWARD KYRTON TO SIR JOHN ELIOT.

8^o March, 1629/30.

He has heard of the infamous mis-judgment against Eliot's appeal. This letter throbs with emotion ; and I confess that even at this late day I find myself all but cursing a King that so dealt with one of his noblest subjects, and, could he but have seen it, truest friends.

SIR

Your Letter vnto me doth import that you haue nowe Leisure to dispose of your time, which makes me venter vpon some part of it with my Letter. I assure you it proceedeth out of the aboundante affection and respect that I beare vnto you, the which I cannot soe well expresse in words as yf there were any occasion wherein my deeds may manifest it vnto you, which when time shall serve I will promyse shall not be wanting. The Judgement vpon

II.

O

you is blowen amongst vs with wonder attending it: for my owne part I can wonder att nothing but I thinke that that man which doth not take your Judgement,¹ as in part a Judgment vpon himselfe, he doth either faile in honestie or discretion. I will vse noe more words vnto you of it, because I knowe you are soe well composed that thinges of this nature although neuer soe high slacke not² your resolutions or move you to be otherwise then you were. the time may come that such vertues may be regarded. the tow Lords tooke your kind remembrāces of them with a great deale of affection, the foote boy that brings you this meets me att Easton with them. I knowe they wilbe euer glad to heare of you. Yf m^r Holles and m^r valentine be with you I pray lett my affectionat loue and service be remembred vnto them and for your selfe I will conclude with this that I can be no longer a honest man yf I forgett to be other then

Your deuoted and faithfull freind and seruant

EDW: KYRTON.

This lre came
8^o Marcij 1629

[Endorsed] To my much Honored
and worthie freind
S^r John Elliott att the
Tower these.

[Seal—A coat of Arms of 6 quarterings.] Quarterly 1 & 6. a chevron betw. 3 cross crosslets. 2. on a chevron, a lion rampant. 3. seven mascles conjoined, 3. 3 & 1. 4. a chevron betw 3 eagles legs erased. 5. on a chevron, 3 lions ramp.]

¹ "vpon . . ." erased.

² "not," repeated & erased.

59. SIR JOHN ELIOT TO EDWARD KYRTON.

March 9th, 1629/30.

He is again in the Tower. The indulgence (!) is re-called. With vixenish vengefulness the King personally imposed the uttermost penalty he dared exact. What a pity the headsman had not earlier duty on such a King!

Sa

y^r Letters have¹ found me according to the directions that y^a gave them, in the Tower, though I know not what spirit infusd that prophesie in ²you to preindicate my beinge; nor how that beinge came soe suddainlie on me, vnlesse it were by instruction of my ffortune, to be answeareable to y^r prophesie: its true I was desgnd hither by a iudgment & it may be y^r presumption was on that; but having rested a full fortnight wher I was & the Judges in their circuits, I had noe expectation of remove till the next time, wherin³ my ignorance is apparant that could not see a way, besides the writts &⁴ common course of lawe. But it may be I goe too farr in the consideration of y^r prophesie, & my ignorance vpon the direction⁵ of y^r Letter w^{ch} might proceede from⁶ grounds⁷ & reasons not coniecturall but warranted by some Late intercourse & intelligence since my comminge to this place:⁸ if soe I

¹ word erased.² "I confess," erased.³ word erased.⁷ several words erased.² "them," erased.⁴ "authoritie of the," erased.⁶ word erased.⁸ several words erased.

crave y^r pardon, & to excuse that^r misprision in my self, must translate the fault to y^a, who giving noe date to y^r¹⁰ expresion, expos'd me to that error through the vncertainty of¹¹ your time.¹² But leaving that, I returne me to the certaintie of y^r favors, w^{ch} have an operation of¹³ such power, as if happines onlie be in libertie, certainlie I am free. the service y^a command me to M^r Holles & M^r Valentine I cannot performe, being now divided from them; what is wthin the compasse of my sphear I should gladlie vndertake. my self I can dispose & have it readie to obey y^a, in hart & affection, w^{ch} are my better interests; the rest is not¹⁴ capable of such meritt, I dare not tender to my frinde. represent my devotion to those Lords who are the summe of true nobilitie; & assure them as I love virtue, I honor them.¹⁵ & soe kissing y^r hands I restate
y^r affectionat servant

J. E.

Marcij 9^o
1629.

[Endorsed] 9^o Marcij 1629
To M^r Kirton.

⁹ word erased.

¹¹ word erased.

¹² word erased.

¹³ several words erased.

¹⁰ word erased.

¹² several words erased.

¹⁴ several words erased.

60. SIR JOHN ELIOT TO JOHN SELDEN.

March 22, 1629/30.

S^r

I vnderstand by this bearer that vpon a quarrell betweene him & another of his fellowe officers at y^r prison he was in the late absence of y^r Marshall displac't by M^r Dutgon. the offence I presume (not rare for such partners in authority to have difference) being not altogether unpardonable; & the quality of the man, such as I dare commend, giving me an affection to his good, I cannot but desire y^r favor in his behalf to labor his reception & to mediat for him wth the marshall, who giving y^a power in all things, cannot denie it in this one, w^{ch} has neither difficulty nor vnfitness to y^r self. I hope it shall not seeme a trouble w^{ch} gives the opportunity of a visitt, in that as I cannot doubt y^r readines, I pray, let my service be presented, for whose sake I hope y^a will effect this, w^{ch} I shalbe ready to requite vpon the like occasion: heer rest

y^r serv^t

March 22

1629.

M^r Selden.[Endorsed] 22^o Marcij 1629To M^r Selden.

61. SIR JOHN ELIOT TO HIS SON RICHARD :
5th April, 1630.

"Eliot's greatest anxiety in the first month that followed his sentence [for he had hitherto been imprisoned without trial] arose from the reports that had reached him of Richard Eliot, his second son. We have seen in what kindly words both youths, now students at Lincoln College, were mentioned by Hampden; but in their tutor's account from Oxford, a distinction was made, and some fears entertained by the father received unpleasing confirmation." (Forster, ii. 568 and onward.) Continues Forster—"If nothing beyond these touching words had survived from Eliot's prison, what is most chivalrous and noble in his nature would have needed no other testimony. His children are as himself. The breath of reproach that sullies them stains him; and the cry of pain that nothing could wring from him in which he had himself no part but suffering, breaks out at the mere fancy of dishonour on one who bears his name." (*Ibid.* ii. 570.)

RICHARD

y^e know how earnestly my affections labor for y^e good, & that (though for the p^rsent I cannot contract the assurance of that happiness, yet) my intentions are soe fixt vpon the hope, that further time will grant it, as no step y^e make is w^out some addition to my thoughts, even y^e least motions & inclinations leading to greife or comfort. In the observation heerof, as intelligence does give it (w^{ch} care cannot be at rest) what shall I say? have I satisfaction? does y^e reputation answer the promises I had? how great were my felicity [it] it did soe! what could be then added to the ioye I should conceive? when all losses, all

troubles, all disasters, all afflictions, can be either lessen'd or supported by anticipation of the hope (through his favor that has given it). the assurance & inioyinge of that comfort must have such an influence & infusion, as all their evils would be converted into good, or chang'd in sence & apprehension; at least, by the strength & opposition of their contrary, they could not but be render'd. totallie forgotten or neglected. But it is otherwise (wth greif I say 'tis otherwise) y^r report answers not the expectation: that wth should have beene a glâs, for comfort vnto me, for example vnto others, y^r carriage & behavior, how vnlike is is it to the colors of my hope, that staines y^a wth the tincture of looseness & neglect! how is it varied from the intentions of y^r promise, that make y^a less affected to the Colledge than the towne; &, for acquaintance more studious then in bookes? how is this differing from the reasons of the time, wth cannot but impose a reservation & stricktness, even in things scarce sensible, that have but relation to me? You cannot but remember at y^r beeing heer (besides the instructions wth I gave y^a) what speciall cautions in this pointe y^a receavd from others who made that the exprefion of their love; & that y^a were then tould into what observation y^a should pass; that y^r condition was not ordinary, & would at noe time be vnstudied, but y^r words, y^r actions, y^r conversations, y^r societies, would be sifted there (if possible) to extract some scandall, or advantage against me; & has this made no more impression on y^a? have the advise of frinds, the instructions of a ffather, no more power to settle & compose y^a? can-

not y^r owne reason, y^r owne discretion in conscience of the duties y^a have learnt (y^r duty vnto God, y^r duty vnto goodness, besides the duty & obligation y^a owe me) naie cannot y^r owne example, in w^{ch} better promises have beene read, otherwise informe y^a, but y^a must so soone venture on the follies of the time, & in the Sea of vanitye hazard to make shipwrack of all my hopes & comforts? then must ther be a conversion of my happines, & my peace & tranquillity are indanger'd that w^{ch}¹ noe outward power could preiudice, myne owne force will vndermine; & that, w^{ch} should have beene for assistance & support, will become an instrum^t of ruine & subversion. You see what apprehensions doe possesse me, & how violently they move, vpon the fear of y^r incomposure & disorder to w^{ch} no affliction can be added, if the ground be true. I will not iudge y^a wthout hearing, nor yet wholly quitt my hopes. if y^a are guilty (as I pray God y^a be not) & have given advantage to myne enemies, let it be soe noe more. y^a may soone retract an error, though habits be not easilie corrected. Consider whose y^a are, what expectation is vpon y^a, & by y^r gravity & composure stop the mouth of all detraction. Let this shew y^a how neerly it attends y^a, & that the observance of noe act or circumstance is omitted: if it be fals that comes reported, & rais'd meerly as a slaunder, yet consider of what importance is y^r care; for if such a building be on sande, what superstructure may be made wher ther is good foundation. As thus I have

¹ a word erased.

my cares, I make my praier for y^e, that the diuine providence would guide y^r resolutions vnto happinefs. Let y^r motions be directed to that end, propound goodnes not pleasure for y^r obiect; Lose not y^eself for libertie, or rather make not liberty a vice. Know that mans distinction is from beasts, but, as they follow only the affections, man his reason. let not others draw y^e to an imitation of their euill; nor multitudes induce y^e to take errors for examples: but let y^r virtues be a president for them, a comfort vnto me, a glorie to y^r Maker, whose riches will adorne y^e, if y^e be faithfull in his service, & a iust dispencer of his talent^e; wherein, as y^e shall haue aduise, y^e shall not want incouragment, nor the blessing of

Y^r most loving ffather

J. E.

Tower 5th Apr. 1630

[Endorsed] 5th Apr. 1630

To Dick Eliot.

62. SIR JOHN ELIOT TO THOMAS KNIGHTLEY, TUTOR
TO HIS SONS: 5th April, 1630.

How exquisitely delicate is the father's silence on what he had written to Richard, though both letters were written on the same day!

S^e

yo^r letter came soe slowlie to my hands, as in part the answeare was p^rvented; & other intelligence intima-

II.

P

tinge a purpose of yo^r beinge¹ heer in London at Easter, caus'd me to deferr the rest in hope of an oportunitie to see you & soe by that advantage more freelie to Communicate. the money you tooke of M^r Towneson was speedily repaid him, & if my servant in the Country make not² his returne accordinge to yo^r tymes, y^e maie on any occasion supplie yo^rselfe by him, whoe has order to y^e purpose, & I doubt not, will readilie pforme it. in³ your Care of my sonnes yo^r laie a great obligacōn on me. & I wish their endeavo^r may be answearable to⁴ your will. if y^e meet wth any indisposicōn in them in respect of their Carriage or affections (for otherwise I doe not fear it) I praie correct it what y^e maie, & give me notice of it, that it pceed not to a habit, for in them my cheife happines consists & noe greater p^rjudice or disadvantage can be given me then through⁵ their persons. my enemyes are many & full of observation, w^{ch} makes a necessitie of much caution both in my friends & me ; therefore to theise, that are the neerest, I have advis'd a speciall reservednesse, & shall desire y^e helpe to second it, that they sorte not too much wth Company no^t studdie large acquaintance, for as that number or varietie has small pfitt, lesse securitie does attend it, & the sollacisme is greater in these tymes to have much confidence then ielousie. for the course of their learninge I referr them to yo^r Iudgm^t, w^{ch} I know allowes

¹ "in Towne," erased.

² "the," erased.

³ "yo^r," erased.

⁴ "make not," repeated and erased.

⁵ "their," erased.

of tymes for exercises and recreations. Att Whitsontide
I shalbe glad to see them heer, and at all tymes, & on all
occasions readie to exprese my selfe.

Y^r affectionate frend

from my lodginge in the
Tower 5th Apr. 1630.

[Endorsed] 5^o Apr. 1630

To M^r Thomas Knightly.

63. SIR JOHN ELIOT TO HIS SON RICHARD:

April 16th, 1630.*

"To his father's remonstrance Richard seems eagerly to have replied with many professions of grief, and promises to strive and regain his love. Very beautiful is the eager and hopeful response. It must be remembered that neither Oxford nor Cambridge was in good repute at this time. D'Ewes tells us that what had made him weary of his own college at the latter was "that swearing, drinking, rioting, and hatred of all piety and virtue under false and adulterate nicknames" (Puritanism, forsooth, and what not!) "did abound there and generally in all the university."—Autob. ii. 141, and Forster, ii. 572.

RICHARD

I have not given that foundation to my love, as y^e
need labor to regain it: the frame & building of my
harte is of such firmnesse; as cannot easilie be shaken. &
the expresions w^{ch} I made, from whence y^e have y^e fears,

* A letter that ought to have followed this, from Moyle to Eliot, has somehow disappeared. Forster doubted not it would be recovered, but it has not been. Strange to say, Forster prints it, ii. 631.

were an effect of that, the tendernes of a ffather soe affectionat to his sonne, that he would¹ expose him to noe danger. to shew y^a that, (that y^a might the better know how to avoid or prevent them) my last did tell y^a what evils y^a were neer; either the evils of y^r owne nature, for who is w^out corruption? or the evils of the place; w^{ch} I hear are too exemplarie: or the evill of the time envie & detraction, from all, or any of w^{ch} (for to some certaynly y^a were subiect) y^a might by that means become free; either by reformation of y^r self, or by reservation towards others, turning their hates & slaunders to advantage. In this indeavor y^a compose my satisfaction, & my hopes are great; strive to give it a perfection, & y^a gaine me, as my affection & love are constantly y^r owne, that will add a felicity & comforte, w^{ch} will give some more latitude & extension to my cares out of the multiplied blessings of
y^r lo. ffather.

Apr. 16^o 1630.

Ri. Eliot.

64. SIR JOHN ELIOT TO HIS SON JOHN:

April 16th, 1630.

SONNE,

having knowledge by y^r letter of the preparation & purpose for y^r iorney hither at Whitsontide, I shall now rest on the expectation of that time. ffor y^r clothes y^a may

¹ "have," erased.

better have them ther then heer in respect of the trouble of sending; & in that observe y^r owne convenience either for cloth or stuff as may be answerable to mourning, w^{ch} I would yet have y^a to retheyne. y^r sister, I thanke god is well at Stephney, & was yesterday heer wth me. I hope shortly to be happie in y^r meeting, & ever to receave that comforte w^{ch} y^r promises have given me; for w^{ch} y^a have the blessing of

y^r most lo. ffa.

Apr. 16th 1630.

Jo. Eliot.

[Endorsed] 16^o Apr. 1630

To my sonne

65. SIR JOHN ELIOT TO JOHN MOYLE (whom Eliot as a youth attacked); 22nd April, 1630.

See Forster, ii. 631. Sir John had been asked to secure one being appointed as 'minister' for Bake St. Germans.

S^a.

according to y^r desire I have vs'd my best indeavor w^{ch} y^r proctor to obtaine y^r satisfaction for the choise of a Minister at St Germans, & something by way of preparation I had done before the receipt of y^r letters, vpon the intelligence of Lakes his death, to incline him therin: but the effect is little to answer the meritt of the suite, though

¹ "Mr Glanville," semi erased.

as much, in respect of favor, as I lookt for. ther is not a deniall, but that w^{ch} reallie may prove soe. he seemes to referr it wholie to the house,¹ yet, if they elect his kinsman, I presume, his expectation is not lost. I am sorrie this returne is not better to the occasion y^e have given me, it may serve for an exprefion of my power, though my affection be beyond it; I cann command corruption out of noe man, but in myne owne hart have a cleer will to serve y^e & shall faithfullie remaine

y^e true frinde

tower lands (?)

22^o Apr. 1630

Mr. Moyle.

[Endorsed] 22^o Apr. 1630

To Mr. Moyle.

66. SIR JOHN ELIOT TO RICHARD KNIGHTLEY:

21 May, 1630.

S^r.

havinge not the commaund of opportunitie I cannott but w^{ch} readines imbrace all safe occasions that maie render mee in some exprefion of my love if not in service to yo^r. I must confesse my selfe vseles all most in all thinges that are worthie of a frind; but in manie more unhappie that I have not libertie of² wordes, that issue of affections w^{ch} make them pceptible to others, the free com-

¹ "but," erased.

² "frindes," semi erased.

merce & traffique of the hart, by w^{ch} the exchange of thanckes and curtesies are ¹ transacted. in this straitenes I have a longe time stood ingag'd for want of a conveyance vnto yo^r. the ground of that necessitie is soe knowne as I neede not doubte the question of it now. the daungers & intelligences were never greater, and therefore I p'sume yo^r charitie will graunt it, that my feare & circumspectiō should be aunsweareable. the first securitie [that] was p'sented mee since my cominge to this place, was but last weeke by yo^r cosen Knightlie, whose hast likewies p'vented mee of that. this nowe w^{ch} is the nexte & cominge from one of the same trust & neerenes to yo^r I hope will make an apologie for both that I had not written sooner and in such manner as mighte have made some satisfacciō for the time. But newes is noe where safe, and I am an ill relato^r of sadd stories; Lett it suffice yo^r that my memorie is charg'd wth a large catalogue of yo^r favo^r w^{ch} have oblig'd mee to be

yo^r most affectionat frind & Brother

J. E.

Tower 21^o Maij 1630.

[Endorsed] 21^o Maij 1630

To M^r Knightlie.

¹ "transacted," semi erased.

67. SIR JOHN ELIOT TO JOHN HAMPDEN:

25th May, 1630.*S^a.

if my weaknesse should be guiltie of ingratitude; these messengers would in yo^r perticular correct me, w^{ch} are a continuall men^cōn & remembrance of yo^r favours, by w^{ch} I am soe infinitlie oblidg^d. I returne them to y^e now as an acknowledgm^t of that debt, or rather as an occasion to increase it. They parted from their Tutor heer vpon a desire I had, they should againe have the happines to kisse yo^r handes & be directed by yo^r Counsell & soe be made the fitter for their course, whereon all my cares & affections have dependance. they can bringe yo^r little newes but of the death of our Leiftenant: who shall succeed him, we yett know not, but report maintaines her custome of designinge many till on[e] be chosen; & in the mean tyme instead of a governo^r & keeper the Tower & wee have that for entertainment. I p^rsume you will not expect more for the p^rsent of busines or intelligence. The satisfac^cōn of my debt for yo^r papers is in p^rparation, w^{ch} I hope you shall speedily receave: my memorie cannot betraye me in any duty to yo^r service, but must be studious of all opportunities to expresse me

Yo^r most affectionate frend

J. E.

May 25th 1630.[Endorsed] 25th Maij 1630.To M^r. Hampden.

* Two private intercessory letters follow here: given in full in Forster, ii. 641-2.

68. SIR JOHN ELIOT TO RICHARD KNIGHTLEY:

10th June, 1630.*S^r

haveinge by this meſſenger received the Comforts of y^r letter, and the oportunitie to ſend ſoe ſoone an anſweare, I cannot but give ſome expreſſion to my hart, &c, though I have noe newes, nor trade in that Comoditie, yett my thanckes muſt be the ſubiect of my penne. I have been inquiſitive of y^r kinsman of y^r health & diſpoſition, & y^r exerceſe as an incident to that, wherein I finde ſoe much time ſpent it^h houſe, & ſoe little in the feilds, that I doubt y^r make y^r libertie a practiſe of imprisonment and by too much meditation vnapt y^r ſelfe for ac^{co}n, w^{ch} is the life and crowne of our endeavo^r. in your courſe, I pray reflect ſomewhat vpon the conſideration of others, & that noe man muſt be a center to himſelf, thinke what intereſt y^r cuntry may p^tend to, what right in y^r is belonginge to y^r frendes, what for my perticular may be challeng'd, what for others, and that y^r maſter who has made you

* Before and following this and onward are a number of private letters on private matters, that, as they are fully printed in the Biography of Eliot by Forster (ii. 630 onward: B. xii. c. iv. Home News and other Letters) are not reproduced here. They all illustrate Eliot's extraordinary interest in the slightest affairs of friends and dependents. See Forster under Drury, Hatcher, Essex, Boscawen, Arundel, Smithe, his Bailiff Dyer, Mayowe, Lord Robartes, Lucie Robarts, Hill, Prideaux, Scawen, Valentine, Lord Warwick, Sir Walter Devereux, Lord Lincoln, Holles, Wyan, Mrs. Blount, Hobart, &c. &c.

Steward of y^r self, expects the imploiment of that Talent to his glorie in all these, & in that respect entertaine some more care about y^r person, to p^rserve it for services to come, & dwell not wholie in speculation, w^{ch} will [not] onlie make yo^u vsefull for y^rself, but for others. for the tyme to come, dispose your self to action, for others hunte, for others hawke, for others take the benefitt of the feilds: doe it for me, that cannot doe it of my selfe, & in yo^r profit and advantage my satisfaction shalbe rendered. I know I need not counsell you who have Abraham & the prophets; but yetton[e] comminge from the dead (who by privation knowes the benefitt of exersice w^{ch} god appoints for the recreation of man) may have some credit more then ordinary, to make some light impresions uppon the minde. pardon me¹ this subiect, that I deale soe frelie wth you in this kinde of entertainment; w^{ch} yett, has soe much necesarie wth in it, as may both warrant & excuse. I have noe more to send you for the p^rsent but my love. my prayers are ever for yo^u & what there shalbe occasion and oportunitie you have in readines all the services and prayers of

Y^r most faithfull frend & brother

J. E.

Tower x^{mo} Junij 1630.

[Endorsed] x^{mo} Junij 1630

To M^r. Knightly.

¹ "that," erased.

69. SIR JOHN ELIOT TO SIR BEVILL GRENVILLE :

June, 1630.

S^r.

haveinge wth much affection received y^r letter & y^r token, it is now tyme to give you some returne, at least in an acknowledgm^t of yo^r favour & my thanks; & to make a Confession of my debt, beinge not in power for satisfaction; but first take my apologic for the delaie that has been past least y^t circomstance accuse me; that I be not thought faultie in these minutes w^{ch} have any relation to y^r service; but may trulie be discern'd in the Cleer-nesse of that readinesse w^{ch} is owinge to y^r merit. I have been¹ all this terme kept by your Countriman Arrundell, in hope & expectation of y^r comminge vp, & vppon that defer'd my writeing, but now beinge freed from that & haveing a safe conduct p^rmised me, I cannot but tell you how much I ioye in y^r absence from this towne, though I greive for the want of y^r p^rsence to my self. ther is nothing heer to please yo^r, nothing worthie of y^r view (y^e Court beinge² not wthin the Compasse of yo^r spheare) imprisonm^t is a favour, secluding the Corruption of the tyme, w^{ch} is soe epedemicall & Common that it leaves almost noe man vninfected, nor a safe retreat for libertie or virtue, but the Country. This is enough to commend the happines of Devonshire, w^{ch} is soe fortunatelie dissituate; but haveing

¹ "kept," erased.² "being," erased.

more excellence by yo^r beinge, nothing can be added but the envie of yo^r enemies, w^{ch} wilbe held in Counterpoise by the prayers & wishes of y^r friends, in w^{ch} numbers are included the devotions of

Y^r servant & Brother
J. E.

Tower Junij 1630.

[Endorsed] Junij 1630

To M^r. Grenvile.

70. SIR JOHN ELIOT TO LADY LUKE :

25^o June, 1630.

MADAM.

vppon an interest w^{ch} S^r Oliver Luke has asur'd me in yo^r favour, I p'sume to Trouble you wth a charge (my daughter) w^{ch} I hope wilbe observant to yo^r will. I know it is a great bouldnes in me to attempt it, haveing noe title or meritt to p'tend, but, the knowledg of y^r selfe, as it makes me thus p'sume, makes Confident of yo^r pardon, & that yo^r goodnes will incline you to an act of soe much pietie. It has a treble object in it ; the motherlesse for yo^r Charitie ; the disconsolate for y^r pittie, the prisoner for yo^r visitt ; all thesse are in hir for the exercise of y^r vertue, for what may be vsefull to my fortune, is satisfied in hir, on whom the courtesie being done, I participate the benefitt. my thankses shall follow it, and are in preparaçon towards y^r, haveing noe other services to

promise yo^a but my prayers, w^{ch} shall most faithfullie attend
y^a being devoted

Yo^r humble servant

J. E.

Tower 25^o Junij 1630.

Lady Luke.

[Endorsed] 25^o Junij 1630.

To y^a La. Luke.

71. SIR JOHN ELIOT TO SIR OLIVER LUKE.

25^o June, 1630.

S^a

as a testimonie of my confidence in y^r love, I have
sent y^a y^r Charge, w^{ch} I hope in all things will conforme to
y^r instruccōns, as I shalbe thankfull for y^t favour. what
p^{ro}portion yo^r Courtesie¹ will hould none cann Judge, that
shall make the estima^{ti}on by themselves, for though from
that measure, (as in my p^{ar}ticular) might be drawne a great
depth of obliga^{ti}on, this (as it standes to my affection) has
yet more &, I must reallie professe it, the good of them
& the desire of their felicitie w^{ch} whome I thus am trusted,
haveing a greater influence on my cares then the tender o
my selfe. nor is she least in that intention, w^{ch} comes now
to kisse your handes ; but as an obiect for the heighth of y^r
Charitie I send hir ; as a meanes to take it & Convey it
vnto me, whose prayers must answeare for the satisfaction

¹ "cann," erased.

of that debt, haveinge neither power nor possibillitie to acquitt it. I know not what libertie I may have to see you of wth yo^r spedilie shall hear. if it please god to make me master of my selfe my tongue shall remember what now may be forgotten; if not, my penne shall have that office, to tell you in what condicōn I am

Y^r servant

J. E.

Tower 25^o Junij 1630.

O. Luke.

[Endorsed] 25^o Junij 1630

To S^r Oliver Luke.

72. SIR JOHN ELIOT to MRS. LANGWORTHY.

2^o July, 1630. Of the children.

GOOD COSEN

haveing not the libertie my selfe to be p^rsent wth my litle ones, I p^rsum'd by this messenger to desire they might remainewth in your vei^w. since yo^r kinde acceptance & consent vnto that motion, it has pleas'd god to send a sickenes to them, by wth their number is now shortned, & my care beinge the more narrowlie contracted, cannot become lefse to those that are. I shall therefore take that benefit of y^r favour, & send them to¹ their M^{rs}, on whome I desire yo^r eye may be soe czst to see them in fitt order,

¹ "yo^r," erased, and "wth yo^r" left un-erased: "on" is spelled "one."

for w^{ch} I have appointed all things w^{ch} may be necessarie for their vse, & such servantes as y^e shall thinke convenient, wherein yo^r direction will carefullye be observ'd & I shall acknowledg it a great obligacōn of yo^r love, in correspondence of which I will ever rest

Y^r most affectionate kinsman

J. E.

Tower 2^o Julij 1630

[Endorsed] 2^o Julij 1630

To M^r Langworthie.

73. SIR JOHN ELIOT TO KNIGHTLEY: 5^o July, 1630.
Reports of his 'enlargements.'

S^a

had I not a more necessary attendance heer, I could make a iorney into the Country, to learne, what newes concern'd my selfe. I hear soe many waies from thence of my freedome and enlargm^t as makes me almost doubtfull in what place I am, & whit[h]er my condiçōn be not separate from my person. if these rumo^rs have intended¹ a libertie of mynde, then 'tis true, I have it, though not as a raritie or a stranger, haveing I thanke god, at noe time been wthout it. but other libertie I know not, haveing soe litle interest in hir masters, that I expect noe service from hir. the other reports yo^e hear of those things w^{ch} are relative to this, are built on like foundations: sand is the best materiall the[y] rest on, the many fancies of the multitude, & what fabricke

¹ "any," erased.

can be rested on that ground yo^r judgment will determine. the scope I have does satisfie, haveing the whole world, & more before me, & in that there is varietie of recreation : health being allowed me for a fellow and companion, what more may be desir'd but a p^rtection against envie, in w^{ch} privacie secures me ² from all others, & yo^r love gives me confidence of y^r selfe for w^{ch} I rest

Yo^r most affectionate frind & Brother

J. E.

Tower 5th Julij 1630.

[Endorsed] 5th Julij 1630

To M^r Knightlie

74. SIR JOHN ELIOT TO SIR OLIVER LUKE :

5th July, 1630.

S^a

though yo^r last direction was mistaken you may now know wher to finde me. my businesse & employ-mentes heer I hope will excuse me that I waite not on yo^a this summer, but if y^a have occasion to Commaund me any thinge in the Tower I am readie to serve you : soe farr I enioy the fredom w^{ch} y^a have given me in the Countrey. The other duties w^{ch} are owing to yo^r merrittes I must praie you by proxie to accept, & that I inioyne my daughter to performe. In hir y^a have my visittes, in hir yo^a have my thanks, for the multitude of yo^r favours ; & what for hir is due must be acknowledg'd by hir selfe, ther beinge

² a word erased.

noe power in me but for the memorie of the debt. Lett
my service be p^resented to yo^r lady, whose handes I kisse,
& in all faithfullnes doe rest

yo^r most affectionate frend

J. E.

Tower 5th July 1630.

[Endorsed] 5th Julij 1630

To S^r Oliver Luke.

75. SIR JOHN ELIOT TO JOHN HAMPDEN:

20th July, 1630.

Tidings from without have reached the prisoner, and his heart is
stirred within him; yet are there jets of gentle humour.

S^a

After y^r pleasure in the Countrey it may be some
entertainment to yo^r leasures to hear from yo^r poore
frende in the tower; & in that hope as¹ one whom y^r
love has soe intituled, I doe now p^rsume to make this
addresse vnto y^a though noe other subiect be before me;
then a desire to draw some intelligence from yo^rself. its a
great want I have had, for the afsurance of yo^r health;
nor cann I be affected wth small care for a thing soe
precious. thinke not tis in complement I tell it y^a, I
pfesse it's truth, that both the reason & estimation are soe
great; as if y^a be not tender of yo^rself, y^a shall not faile to
answer it as an infinite iniurie to me. I have noe newes

¹ "in," erased.

to give y^a but the happines of this place, w^{ch} is soe like a paradise that ther is none to trouble vs but our selves. all companie is gone, but some bookes & the records. & that opportunitie which multitudes have sought for, I have frely given me. Yett some faces we may see if ther be constancie in the windes ; there is now certainly appointed vs a new leiftenant of the tower, ther want^e only a qualification^s of the man by an act of denization, w^{ch} is p^rparinge ; & that done, w^{ch} is p^rmitted to morrow, we then expect that worthy instrument S^r William Balford ; so much were the antients short of the wisdomes of these tymes that we studdie not the fittnes of the places, for the men ; but havinge made o^r choise then doe give the man an aptnes for the place. besides this to come, some late faces we have seen w^{ch} in themselvs & the occasion are remarkable. Amongst the other rarities of this sphear ther is newlie heer expos'd some p^{te} of the iewells to be seene, the ffonte the Prince was christned in & such others to that spectacle like a white howse the doves^s repaire, & everie daie has varietie of admirers ; w^{ch} the rest, & I think not much behinde the first, ther was a blinde man a preacher so much forgettfull of his callinge & condiçon that tis not easilie resolv'd whither he did more wonder or were wondered at. the truth in fact I build not on the incertaintie of tradition, both seeing & knoweing of the man. but y^a will say what pleasure to⁴ a blinde man in the glorie of an obiect ? what

² "only," erased.

³ "doe," erased.

⁴ "an old," erased.

beutie cann delight him that hath not sence to see it? I know not; but in him I see a true Character of the world: & if example prove, surely he is Justifiable in this, the greater givinge authoritie to the lesse, the like & more being generally done by all men, by most wthout p^riudice, I may saie; who is not taken wth false riches? who does not Idolatrize proud honors? who covets not the corrupt theatres of imploiment & travells not in the expectation & admiration of these things? what doe these differ from the spectacles of a blinde man? what more vse or advantage cann they give? cann we see any benefitt they reflect, naie cann we touch it wth the true p^rception of the sowe? sure tis rare to find it, & in the comon affectations that doe move even the ends p^rpos'd doe checke the expectation of all good; when vanity is the pointe of our designes what lesse then vanity cann we thinke it that is but the meanes & passage to that pointe? the end y^a know is the p^rfection of the worke, & if that be vanity what more may be conceav'd of what, but leades toward^e it? surely the same ignorance & blindnes w^{ch} this man had in sence, moste men have in minde, & vnderstandinge; they labour in the affection of those objects w^{ch} are not p^rper to their faculties: that they seeke^s w^{ch} is not vsefull to them; or, (if they bring it to that aptnes) in the vse, corrupts them. but I extend this occasion of intelligence too farr, I have made my superstruction to wide on this small ground. y^a must p^rdon the libertie I take, w^{ch} by way of

^s "that," erased.

intercourse to yo^r gives me the boldnes to saie any thing,
lett it excuse me that I have now done, & further cease to
trouble y^r, restinge

Yo^r most faithfull frend

J. E.

thinke not y^r papers are forgotten. they
have beene long in preparation, but by
reason of the imperfectnes of the copies,
take much time & trouble, yet ere long
they wilbe ready.

20 Julij 1630.

[Endorsed] 20 Julij 1630

To Mr. Hampden.

76. SIR JOHN ELIOT TO SIR OLIVER LUKE:

July 23, 1630.

S^r

I have expected a while what occasion would p^rsent
it selfe for intelligence, that thereby I might have some-
thinge more to give y^r then my thanks; but whither it
be the Consideration of y^r tyme, to know that that's
enough; or the calmenesse, or dulnesse of these daies, that
makes them lesse pregnant then the former, ther is such a
quiet & securitie; that the greatest news we have is how
wee eate or sleep, w^{ch} I thanke god, is in a contynuall
meriment & feast. they say wee are shortlie to have a
new leiftenant of the Tower & I beleeve he is certainly
design'd but there wants an act of denization to make him

fitt he beinge a Stranger, Sr William Balford, & that beinge done w^{ch} is now in agitation, he is presently to be lookt for. other rarities ther are not on this side¹ the Court; what motions are in that sphear my perspective will not reach, or if it make any thinge in litle, tis soe excellent, as it corrupts my sense, I cannot know or iudge it. onlie I maie wth bouldnesse expresse my self to you w^{ch} in all things I shall doe most really and affectionatly as devoted

Yo^r faithfull frind & servant

J. E.

Julij 23^o 1630

[Endorsed] 23^o Julij 1630

To Sr oliver luke.

77. SIR JOHN ELIOT TO CAPT. THOMAS GODFREY:

2^d August, 1630.

S^r

the saifty of this conveyance p^rvents all excuse & though I wrote not, his p^rsence were a letter. a larg remembrance he is, & I hope y^a soe will take him, from me, who wanteing better interest, yett, thus may send him vnto y^a. he is likewise a pcell of intelligence, soe great a newes, as I thinke y^a could meet wth nothing stranger & soe full of the knowledge of the tyme as y^a have all things else in him, soe that in all p^ts he is the exactnesse & p^rfection of a letter. to him therefore I have comitted

¹ "of," erased.

all¹ the offices of my love, his duty is to see y^a & to serve y^a in those parts ; and if ther be any imployment for y^a heer of w^{ch} I might be worthy, his care must be to intimate the occasion & I shall endeavour. in the rest he has vnder-taken likewise for me² to kisse the hands of y^r good Lady & to make hir an acknowledgm^t of my debt. y^a have my prayers for satisfaccōn ; & when there shalbe opportunity for more my selfe.

Y^r servant

J. E.

2^o August 1630

[Endorsed] 2^o August 1630

To Mr. Godfry.

78. SIR JOHN ELIOT TO SIR OLIVER LUKE :

10^o August, 1630.

S^a

by this tyme y^a see the errors of y^r intelligence, w^{ch} it may be was grounded vpon the words and outside, but had noe light of the inside & meaninge of our Masters. ther are yett many things to come before the opportunity y^a look't for, & tyme has a great worke of p^rparation, if it be feaseable, to fitt it selfe for that ; much may be p^rtended in the mean while & phaps some quicke exp^ressions may be made, but to delude not satisfie ; the current runns against it, and though some aer move it sup^rficially as the waves ;

¹ "my," erased.

² "likewise," erased.

tis' not naturall, the depth & streame goe otherwise, & carry althings to their fall, yett our hope & expectation is the same. y^r present comes soe well at all points, as besides the woodman & the Cooke it commend^e the Carrier. we want but some returne to answer it ; the acceptation, as our thanks, is free ; takeing it for an instance of y^r bountie, by wth our service is ingag'd merrily to eate it ; & my neighbour leaveing his hawker, does mean to fly himself at this. ffor the instruccon of my daughter Bese in musicke, as y^a are pleas'd to let downe y^r thoughts to that pticular, I cannot but wth the acknowledgm^t of y^r love, gladlie imbrace the occasion, and if ther may be wthout y^r trouble that advantage given hir, I would not have hir to neglect it. what entertainment the teacher shall merit, shalbe given him ; & if ther want instruments or any things from hence, vpon notice it shalbe p^rsently p^rvided. rep^rsent my humble service to y^r Lady, & asure hir though other abilities are not wth me that in my prayers I serve hir, & shalbe ever
y^r most faithfull frind

J. E.

Tower x^{mo} August 1630.[Endorsed] x^{mo} August 1630To S^r oliver luke.

79. SIR JOHN ELIOT TO SIR BEVILL GRENVILLE:

17^o August, 1630.

S^a

the consent between my condition & the tyme, is a full¹ excuse for my seldome writeinge, ther beinge not, (as I dare not be a relater if ther were) any thing that's newes, such matter beinge to me, as fire was to the Satire more dangerous then pleasant. I have only my ould affection still to serve yo^a: wth I hope needes not these expref-sions; that afsurance being given y^a in such² Characters, as cannot be obliterated. the p^rsent occasion y^r cōmādes me, is for the satisfacōn of S^r Henrye Bowrcheir, who has much importun'd me to know whether y^a would be pleas'd to depart againe wth Londey either in fee or lease. he seemes to have a great desire of it, & if y^a intend that waie, I³ beleeeve he wilbe drawne to a faire price. what answer y^a direct me I shall give him & if ther may arise from hence any advantage vnto y^a I shalbe readie to improue it wth the best endeavours of

y^r frinde & Brother

J. E.

p^rsent my service to y^r good Lady & tell her though the pversnesse of my ffortune will not suffer me to kisse hir handes at Stowe,

¹ "of," erased.

² "afsurance," erased.

³ a word erased.

yet I hope hir sweetnes does deserve so kinde
a husband as will sometymes shew hir Lon-
don & then I may crave the happines to
see hir.

Tower 17^o August 1630.

[Endorsed] 17^o August 1630

To M^r Grenvile.

80. SIR JOHN ELIOT TO JOHN HAMPDEN:

20^o August, 1630.

S^a

your messenger giveinge me oportunity by his staie
I cannot but returne y^e some short expression of the great
pleasure I conceive in the occurrence of y^r letters, wth
have enough both of business & intelligence, in the inti-
maçõn of y^r health & name. our frend in Bedfordshire I
heard from yesterday & by him knew of yo^r being ther ;
in whose love my satisfacõn is soe great, that but by yo^r
example, it could not be ¹ reparralle'd, the confidence I have
in him, being like my asurance in y^r selfe, cleer & vndoubted.
wherein, as I am taken wth the admiracon of yo^r virtues,
your Charities, in tending the distresed, I can not but
wonder to see it turn'd this way, to one that cannot merit
it ; for though, in truth, that does appropriate the obiect,
in fact, it is soe contrary² to the tyme, as it will seem a
Solacisme ; but it may be to give pfection to the worke. y^e

¹ "comparable," erased.

² "wth," erased.

intend yo^r silence shall secure you: that may not be, my acknowledgments must prevent it, & if the single reason of yo^r owne goodnes will not serve, to have moved in these intentions, it must then come from an emulation of y^rselves contending to more excellence. I am not fitt to reconcile, that am the unhappie subiect of, this strife; nor doe I thinke it cann p^rceed to victory; yett conquest wilbe. certainly to both. this I cann warrant you (besides that better purchase) gaininge me though of noe value, yett
yo^r most faithfull & affectionat frinde

J. E.

Tower xx^o August 1630.[Endorsed] August xx^o 1630

To Mr. Hampden.

81. SIR JOHN ELIOT TO MRS. CORBET:

24^o August, 1630—faith and love.

SWEET MRS. CORBETT

I am much ioyed to hear of yo^r good health, & as the asurance of y^r favour taken from myne owne hopes, has still affected me; this testimonie wth comes from y^r exprefion, has such an influence, that it fills me, wth delight; soe as I have noe app^rhension of restraint but in the wante of soe much libertie as might carrie me to y^r p^rsence. In all things else but that, I pticipate wth my frendes, I have noe power to visitt them but¹ by letters,

¹ "my," erased.

nor much confidence in that, in other things the Communitie is equall ; I have the same daie & nights, as vsefull, & not longer ; the same aer, & element^e, of the same temper, if not better ; the same sunn & moone & stars givinge the same lights, & seasons in their courses ; the same god I have, who gives direction to all these, and in his mercie makes them as serviceable, as comfortable to me, as to the greatest, the richest of his creatures : y^t communitie is not barr'd me, to inioy his favour heer whose strength & power is every where. he has been hitherto my p^rtec^on, & in his owne tyme, wilbe hereafter my deliverance. my duty is to attend vpon his pleasure ; w^{ch} I hope, he will enable me faithfully to pforme, his p^rvidence guides the rest, through w^{ch} conduc^on I doubt not but I shall most certainly be rendred free to my frendes, or him ; as he appoints in order my indeavours for their good, if soe weake an instrument may be vsefull ; or the felicitie or happines of his servant, w^{ch} depend^e not on this life. the litle flocke I have, has the same Sheapheard, whose care p^rserves vs all ; they are now, as in the wildernes^e, exposed to the violence of these tymes, & sharers in my fortunes, yett still kept by him ; one^s has been shortned in their number & the rest latelie visited wth sicknes but restored againe, they now rest vnder the shadowe of his mercies, who I hope will yett feed them in his green pastures, & lead them forth besides the waters of comfort, to whose p^rtec^on I must leave them. my praiers containe the whole office I cann doe

^s "only," erased.

them, and are in generall my whole duty to my frendes ;
 wth I must desire y^r likewise to accept from
 y^r most affectionat servant

J. E.

Tower, London

24^o August 1630.

[Endorsed] 24^o August 1630

To Mⁿ Corbett.

82. SIR JOHN ELIOT TO SIR OLIVER LUKE :

25^o August, 1630.

S^a

the deadnesse of this place p^rvent^h all occasion of
 intelligence, & we are soe vnactive of our selves, as we are
 hardlie capable of the knowledg of what is done by others.
 ffame saies that the ffrench forces have had some late successe
 in Savoy, & that the Spanish enterprises take more then
 thier wanted slownes ; pticulars are mentioned, but of noe
 moment ; the truth consists in letters, and those are to all
 tymes soe serviceable in their language as may answear all
 occasions, that I confesse wth me, they have small credit, &
 are more easilie forgotten then reported. of my fellow
 prisoners being wth you, I meane in Bedfordshire as of the
 companie went wth him, I heard before y^r m^essage,¹ and
 am now in a doubtfull expectation of what more. its true,
 he has a good while, & it maie be on good reason, forborne
 to see the Tower, but I hope it is not in neglect of his

¹ "I," erased.

poore frendes, who affectionately doe wishe him not to neglect himselfe. y^r are neer the Sceane where that storie is now acted, & may by observa^{ti}on have discovery of the passages. I shalbe glad to know that my feares are but in vaine. y^r asurance in that pointe will much please me, at least the intercourse will make some compensation for my trouble, if things should sorte amisse; and y^r happines shall give me satisfac^{ti}on, for w^{ch} I pray & rest

y^r faithfull frend & servant

J. E.

Tower 25th August 1630

[Endorsed] 25th August 1630

To S^r oliver luke.

83. The same to the same.

S^a

haveing since the receipt of y^r letters & remembrance had tyme to Consider of the favour, w^{ch} in them & many others y^a have exprest, I must now returne my acknowledgm^t & thanks that have noe other payment for the debt. newes we have none to give you of w^{ch} I dare p^rsume to be relater. manie things are caried in the aer; whereof there is lesse truth then expectation. our frend Hampden being heer I doubt not but he will speedily salute either by himselfe or his letters, & then you cannot faile of what intelligence is worthy, whose indeavours are a p^rvention to mine. he has now given an interruption to these by his p^rsence at the Tower, & Co^mmandes me to make a p^rsent-

tion of his service, w^{ch} haveing done in some hast kising y^r
handes I rest

y^r most affectionat frend

J. E.

Sept. x^{mo} 1630.

[Endorsed] x^{mo} Septemb^r 1630.

To S^r Oliver Luke.

84. SIR JOHN ELIOT TO CAP^t. THOMAS GODFREY:
21st Sept^r., 1630.

S^r

the satisfac^ōn w^{ch} y^r letters give me, must be
measur'd by my love, w^{ch} I assure y^e is such, as I cannot
well expresse, but if there were occasion, tis wthout all
limitte, & y^e have not a fuller posse^sion of y^r selfe, then
a free command off me. I ioy in y^r health, & shall praie
for the Contynuance, haveing p^{te} of my happines in that,
to know at this distance, y^e are well, w^{ch} when god pleases
by a neerer intelligence I may gather. the straie sheep (if I
may not call him lost) w^{ch} is now broken into y^r pastures
(mistake I not the condi^ōn he is in) has more scope then
libertie and is not fattening for himselfe. his price is¹ already
treated, & the markett after michaelmas. what favour then
he has in these crops of the daisie & the lillie lett his owne
wisdom^e iudge, as whether he may glorie in this walke.
I hear of many removes he makes, & (but that adventures
are not incident) I should suppose it to be² a storie of some

¹ a word erased.

² "the," erased.

errant knight, some Quixote, or other such famous vnder-taker; but finding nothinge besides travell to occur, a continuall motion & circulation wthout end, that resemblance gives me some anxietie & doubt whether a new forme be not given, to the ould wanderinge Jew; or o^f acquaintance past by transmigration into him; yett in what name or shape, or condiçon he be extant commend me to the gentleman; & if y^a cann, reduce by y^r counsell, if y^a finde him capable of advise. I fear he may misleade his leader, & then instead of one there wilbe more delinquent^e & the great punishment of either. we heer are wthout that danger, as wee are wthin the pale w^{ch} they have broken & soe are the masters of more safety though o^f pleasures may seeme lesse. yett in this wee doe not envy them, & only crave that favour at their handes that they turn not that weapon vpon vs. p^rsent my service to y^r lady, & as you see them to all our worthie frendes in Lincolnshire. I have now a greater admiraçon of that country then before, when a man dare venture his necke to visitt it, & in that respect could gladly be a witnesse of that paradise, w^{ch} if opportunitie be given me, I shall readilie indeavour in affection to kisse y^r handes, being devoted
y^r frend & servant

J. E.

Tower London 21 Sept. 1630

[Endorsed] 21^o Sept. 1630

To Mr. Godfrey.

85. SIR JOHN ELIOT TO JOHN HAMPDEN:

4^o October, 1630.S^a

the Continuall p'sence of y^r love Contradicts anie thinge that can be said, or thought of forgettfullnes or neglect. vpon that subiect in the p^ricular y^r mention I conceive ther is noe oportunitie, but silence, & expect'ōn for a while ; the new treatie being driven to that period, as must either produce somethinge worthy laughter or open the difference of agents, & soe cause a reflection on the former. however we must know, that they saile but by their owne Compasse, or rather tied their course, & have noe esteema^on of our windes. wee may be breathing in their waie, phaps retard them when they are makeinge neerer vnto vs, or divert their inclina^ons, if they shall thinke wee are descendinge vnto them ; but to hasten them beyond their owne reasons, & necessities, if I mistake not, has more of impossibilitie, then hope, & is a difficulty of too great adventure for my frends. they are yet serious in entertaynments, & have noe leasure for their busines ; when they dissolve those cares, wee shall ere longe see the issue of their plaie, & then if we think fitt we may beginn our game. in the meane tyme if ther occur anie thinge for y^r knowledge, I shall give intelligence. & so kisinge y^r handes I rest

Y^r most faithfull frend

J. E.

Tower London

4^o october 1630[Endorsed] 4^o octobr 1630To M^r. Hampden.

86. SIR JOHN ELIOT TO SIR OLIVER LUKE:

13^o October, 1630.S^a

I have nothinge to returne y^a in exchange for all y^r favours, but my thanks. the secrecie or dulnes of these tymes, gives vs only expecta^on, not for the better, the violl beinge preparinge wth calamitie, & misfortune, & when tis full, we shall have it powred vpon vs. the p^sent fear of the sickenes, does encrease, & it's doubted, will cause a totall declininge of this terme. a great deadnesse it makes in London, they say (for y^a may guesse I am noe wittnes) in the heat, & extremitie of the last sicknes it was not more, nor lefse resorte of people, nor lefse tradinge. yett my trade I thanke god keepes vp, w^{ch} is prayer & meditation, wherein I doe daily sacrafice for my frends, haveinge y^a happines in a cheife remembrance, as

Y^r most affectionat servant

J. E.

Tower London 13^o octob^r 1630[Endorsed] octob^r 13^o 1630To S^r Oliver Luke.

87. SIR JOHN ELIOT TO RICHARD JAMES, B.D.:

7^o Nov., 1630.S^a

next y^rself y^r letters are most acceptable, w^{ch} besides the evidence of y^r love, gives me asurance, & intelli-

II.

T

gence of y^r being, wherein I have an implicacōn of y^r health. it is now Terme wth vs, & all our studie is entertainment, our Logicke, our Rhetoricke, our Philosophie is but the contemplation of acquaintance, distinction of friends; repetition of impertinencies, how this mans wife & that mans daughter (for the weaker are most car'd for) & tothers neighbour does, wherein the expectation is not what shall be replied, but how it is accepted. John Selden returned on thursdaie last to the gatehouse, & for a welcome, he, & his fellow p^rsoners, are put to close restraints, & their keeper for the licence he has given them, fin'd a hundred powndes & Committed to the Marshallsey: what the issue wilbe we know not, pchance it is but a Storme before a sunnshine & this cloud beinge over, the heavens may be cleer: but I make it neither a iudgment or coniecture, haveing not consulted wth ou^r Pythonefse; y^a knowe the virtue that it meettes wth vpon wth noe impresion can be made. wee heer are in a deep tranquillitie; not troubled if not forgotten. the gate & walls onely doe resist vs; all the rest is ours. & I, as I have alwaies been profest am still

y^r affectionate frend

J. E.

Tower london

7^o Novembr. 1630.

[Endorsed] 7^o Novembr 1630

To M^r. James.

88. SIR JOHN ELIOT TO HIS SON RICHARD :

7^o Nov., 1630.

RICHARD

that y^r studies may not want occasion, if my letters doe import it I shall often sollicit y^a as now, to the intention of that worke, hopeinge more often by that meanes to hear againe from y^a, for till the last conveyance I had noe litle doubt, after soe longe a silence, where y^a were, or whether y^a were or noe, but now y^r paper has resolv'd me, wth some satisfacōn to my hopes, that the reflection of y^r vertues, will in time afford me both comfort, & confidence ; comfort in y^r happines and good, & confidence against all accident. ffor as my hopes soe my feares have their cheife place in y^a (y^a & y^r brother, for those two I make but one, in respect of the spiritt, & affection that does guid them, & that vnitie w^{ch} I trust, shall alwaies be between y^a) who, as in order & expectacōn y^a are first, are likewise the greatest obiect of my care, the successe of w^{ch}, will stand for a patterne, & predicōn to the rest. therefore y^a must indeavor to make this p^rsident exact, that shall have transition to others ; & not to frame it to the Common modells of the tyme but contrarium mundo iter intendere like the primum mobile, & first Sphear, though the whole world, the generallitie of men, as the lese orbs, make their revoluōns irregular ; y^a lett y^r motions have that regularitie & fullnesse as noe others maie impeach them, but rather incline to the¹

¹ "alteracon," semi erased.

attraction of y^r goodnese, &, as ad raptum be drawne to that example. In this case, it will not be enough, wth y^e [to] p^tend to abandon some acquaintance, but to leave all; I meane the pleasure of societie that esca malorum, as Cicero calls it, & to retire wholie to y^rselfe. virtue is more rigid then to be taken wth delights; those vanities she leaves, for those she scornes hir selfe. her pathes are arduous, and rough, but excellent, yea, pleasant to those that once have past them, honor is a concomitant they have to entertaine them in their iorney; naie it becomes their servant; & what is attended by all others those that travell in that waie have it to waite one them. & this effect of virtue has not as in the vulgar acceptation; its dwellinge on a hill, it crowds not in the multitude; but extra conspectum, as Seneca saies, beyond the Comon prospect, for what is familiar is cheape; & those things alwaies in greatest admiracōn w^{ch} are least seene; the desire giveing lustre to the obiect. maius é lonquinquo reverentia saied Tacitus, all glorie is heightened by the distance, not of place, but tyme. that it is rarely seene, makes it more glorious & admirable, w^{ch} wthout a wante, & expectation would be lost at least neglected, as a Prophett is not honor'd in his³ Countrie.³ applie this then vnto y^rselfe for we may compare Mantua wth Rome. would y^e have estimaçōn amongst men (for honor is noe other) ther are two waies to gaine it, virtue and privacie, and y^e latter

³ "owne," erased.

³ "but more acceptable wth strangers," semi erased.

is an inducement to the former, for privacie is the onelie nurse of Studdies. Studdie of virtue therefore for virtue or honors sake, what is most happie for y^rselfe or most pretious wth others, retire, that it may follow y^a; follow not that w^{ch} flies when its pursued, for shadowes & honor are in that qualitie alike if not the same. But I doubt there are shadowes of those shadowes that are followed; somethinge lesse then honor, while the substance & virtue is neglected: how comes it else that y^r Tutor should complaine y^a are carelesse & remisse? it cannot be wher ther is true affection there should be indiligence, & neglect; when studie is declin'd the desires are alienated from the virtue, for noe end is attained wthout the meanes; & the neglect of y^r shewes a diversion from the other. if it be since my last, I must resume my feares, that (though y^r owne iudgm^t did not guide y^a) my cautions should be lost. if it should be heareafter, when that advise, these reasons and the Command and authoritie of a ffather (a ffather most indulgent to the happines of his Child) w^{ch} I now give y^a, to redeeme the tyme is spent; to redeeme the studdies y^a have mist; naie to redeeme y^rselfe, who are ingag'd to danger in that hasard & adventure: if these make noe impresfions, & those must be read in the Characters of y^r Course; if the[y] worke not an altera^con, if they cause not a new diligence & intention, an inten^con of y^rselfe, an intention of y^r obiect, virtue; an intention of the meanes, y^r studdie, & an exact intention of y^r tyme to improve it to that end; I shall then receive that wound, w^{ch} I thanke god, noe enemy could give me, sorrow & affliction of the

minde, & that from him from whom I hop't the Contrarie,
but I still hope, & the more confidently for the promise
w^{ch} y^r letters have assur'd me. lett it be bettered in
pformance by y^r future care, & diligence, w^{ch} shalbe
accompanied wth the prayers & blessing of

Y^r most loveinge father

J. E.

Tower London. 7^o Novemb^r 1630.

[Endorsed] 7^o Novembr 1630

To R. Eliot.

89. SIR JOHN ELIOT TO CAPT. THOMAS
GODFREY: 8^o Nov., 1630.

S^a.

I have had this daie a double happinesse by the
accession of y^r letters and y^r frends: & beinge parted now
from them, I cannott but p'sentlie returne my selfe to y^a.
its a great share y^a have in me, even all if y^a commaund it,
& not to give it some expression were to transgresse both
gratitude & love. I am confident I have had y^r prayers
for all that I inioye, & it's too much not to be acknow-
ledg'd. what y^a have given me in y^r selfe is soe much
about all meritt, that I have nothinge to requite it, but y^r
like prayers & wishes: for the retribution of my selfe more
then is imported in affection; is soe vaine and vselesse, as
it is vnworthy y^r acceptance & I would not have that
affinite wth complement to offer what I have not abilitie to
performe: but thus much I assure (& I hope for better for

worse y^a will receave it) that what I am I am wholie y^a
 & readie on all occasions to exprefse me

y^r most faithfull frend

J. E.

Tower London

8^o Novembris 1630

[Endorsed] 8^o Novembr 1630

To M^r Godfrey

90. JOHN MOYLE TO SIR JOHN ELIOT:

11^o Nov., 1630.

RIGHT WORTHY

& Beloved Sr. I shall intreate a courtesie att your
 handes; your tenant John Rode of South Bake tooke a
 reversion, or a farther estate of one whole tenim^t in South
 Bake; & of halfe a Tenim^t in windon w^{ch} he held of you
 (as of your mannour of Cuttenbeake for terme of his life)
 for w^{ch} he was to pay att certayne dayes 160^l whereof he
 has payd 41^l & in pte of paym^t of some pte of ye rest of¹
 the monney w^{ch} he was to pay you, as likewise² in pte of
 paym^t of a debt of 90^l w^{ch} he owed vnto Laurence Prynn;
 he was³ constrayned to sell his right in Windon vnto one
 Troute of Caricoue, who vppon my vndertaking, in ye
 behalfe of John Rode, y^t he should have his coppie according
 to his agreem^t. att Alholantide, delt wth hym, & has giuen
 in security vnto Laurence Prynn afores^d for 50^l w^{ch} Rode

¹ a word erased.

² "to," erased.

³ "contented," erased.

did owe ye sayd Prynn, & for w^{ch} ye sayd Rode was then sued. & since enter'd into ye sayd grownd, and has bestowed greate charge in sanding and manuring itt; & did likewise according to his agreem^t tender att the Court before Alholantide such money as he was then to pay, w^{ch} was 15^l and was then ready to giue in sufficient security for 35^l more. But Rode by meanes y^t one Harvy of North Hill, w^{ch} should have married wth his kinswomā came not foorth according to promise wth his money, att ye sayd Court Troute could not have his coppie, as I promis'd hym. wherevppon Mr. Mayowe ye Steward will'd Rode to⁴ come att ye next court after Alholantide, & to bring his money & security, promising hym y^t he then should have his coppies both for Windon (w^{ch} he had sett off vnto Troute) one w^{ch} he was to have to hymselfe 3 liues whomsoever he would nominate (insteede of those w^{ch} were on his agreem^t) for South Bake he was to have hymselfe, & his wife,⁵ John Trussell & Alice Trussell his sisters sonn & daughter; he had liberty granted hym by ye agreem^t to change John Trussell but not Alice. Now att ye court appoynted after Alholantide he came; but being againe fayl'd wth all by the sayd Harvy, He requested me being then att ye court to disburse for hym ye money w^{ch} he was then to pay w^{ch} was 22^l & farther to giue security for ye rest of ye fine; w^{ch} in regarde of my ingagement formerly made vnto Troute for his copie I was contented to doe; & did proffer your servant Mr Hill ye money y^t was then due & sufficient security for ye

⁴ a word erased.

⁵ "his," erased.

rest y^t ye sayd Rode was to pay ; in lew of w^{ch} I was to have ye. two liues in reversion of hym & his wife. but in regarde Alice Trussell by ye wordes of y^e agreem^t was to stand for one of ye liues ye Steward would not venture to admitt of any other vntill he knew your mynde. ye two liues may itt please you y^t I intrud to nominate are John Moyle my sonn, & Bridgett Moyle (your mothers god daughter) ye difference betwixt the life y^t I would intreate you to change^a and my daughter Bridgett is but small: my daughter is about 12 or 13 yeares old Alice Trussell is about 18 or 19 att ye most ; for ye change if you please to take any thing I will giue you any fitting content. And even thus craving pardon of you for my oū much bouldnesse in trobling you so much w^{ch} this triffle, wishing you health, & a speedy enlargem^t, & much future serenity of fortune to you and all yours not forgetting myne & my wiues best love & service vnto you

I Rest

your ever loving friend & neighbour

Jo: MOYLE:

from Bake in St. Germans

this 11th of November 1630 .

[Addressed]

To the right worth my very loving friend^r
S^r John Elyott knight att his lodging in ye
Towre in London giue these

[The Seal is paly of 2 coats, dexter, a

^a "is," erased.

^r "John E," erased.

chevron charged with a crescent, and a file
of 3 points in chief sinister, checky, a chief
Vaire.]

[Endorsed] 11 Novembr. 1630

M^r Moyle.

91. SIR JOHN ELIOT TO KNIGHTLEY.

22^d Nov., 1630.

S^a.

though I have lost somethinge of my hope in the
expectation of yo^r p^rsence; yet I have a happines in the
assurance of yo^r health wth both yo^r letter and yo^r messenger
importe. I confesse there is soe little to invite yo^a to this
towne, (and this place I am in has lesse) that to wish yo^a
here is but to wish y^a to a punishment, and from a calme
to drawe yo^a neere a tempest. frindes here have noe enter-
course wth safetie, but what is chang'd onelic in affections;
they communicate but by thoughtes and have but the intel-
ligences of spirittes: all their service is their praiers, and
that yo^a knowe at anie distance maie be done, the opera-
tions being by influence, wth favour I am confident I have
allwaies had from yo^a, and shall not hereafter be wthout it.
there is nothinge els I can desire (for yo^r love is spoke in
that) and for this as my obligation shalbe great, I shall
repaie yo^a wth the like, beinge most affectunatelie devoted
y^r faithfull frind & broth^r

J. E.

Tower 22^o Novembr^e 1630

[Endorsed] 22^o Novembr. 1630.

To M^r Knightly.

92. SIR JOHN ELIOT TO SIR HENRY MARTEN :

Nov. 29^o, 1630.S^a

as I have formerlie bene your suito^r for M^r Valentine I must still in y^e same confidence of yo^r love contynue that desire, that yo^r iustice maie be a p^{ro}tec^{ti}on to his cause depending in yo^r Co^{rt} ag^t the power of all opposers. yo^r knowe hee is obnoxious to the time, and by that manie difficulties maie be rais'd vpon the quarrells to his p^{er}son, wherein yo^r favo^r onelic can secure him, by dispatch of his p^{re}sent busines to p^{re}vent the dangers y^e maie come, w^{ch} circumstance wilbe an essentiall part of iustice, w^{ch} those respects it is attended. and therefore I p^{re}sume to importune it more earnestlie, and to entreate that at yo^r next sittinge yo^r will p^{ro}fit it, w^{ch} reallie shalbe taken as an act of yo^r affection exprest in p^{ar}ticular to mee, and have that power & obligation as if there were noe others. This alone should make mee

yo^r most faithfull frind & Servant

J. E.

Novemb^r 29 1630.[Endorsed] 29 Novemb^r 1630To S^r Hen : Marten

93. SIR JOHN ELIOT TO JOHN MOYLE :

7^o Dec., 1630. See N^o 90.S^a

I am sorrie my tenaunt Rodd should be an occasion of yo^r trouble for the reparation of his faultes. I confesse

to mee hee does but what^e [I] expected in the not pformance of his bargaine, the doubt of w^{ch} had made mee allwaies vnwilling to deale wth him, and the composition w^{ch} hee had was graunted in my absence: wherefore wthout p^riudice to iustice I mighte nowe insiste vpon the aduantage if yo^r respect p^rvaild not. but that has a greater power in mee therein to secure him, & not wthstanding the im-providence of the man to estate him where hee was, to w^{ch} end in aunsweare to yo^r love, I will geve order to my servante Hill at his retorne into the Cuntrye to repaie him the money that^e receav'd, and soe to leave him to his old interest of the tenemt^e in w^{ch} hee must acknowledg yo^r curtesie & favo^r for whose satisfaction it is done by

yo^r most affectionate frind

J. E.

7 Decemb^r 1630

[Endorsed] 7th Decemb^r 1630

To M^r Moyle.

94. SIR JOHN ELIOT TO SIR OLIVER LUKE:

Dec^r 14th, 1630.

(On Castlehaven, see Forster, ii. 610.)

S^r

I p^rsume in theis times yo^r have little expectation of good newes, but a contynewall feare of the contrarie: wherein wee have an example here amongst vs, if not too ill for this beyond the comparison of former ages, it is the match of that in Tacitus, w^{ch} he calls, miseriarum ac servitiū

atrox exemplum: reus pater, accusator filius, a sonne charging his father wth such crimes; as, if true, the resolution is not easie, whether is most offending against the lawes of god & nature. the sonne has alreadie made himselfe obnoxious to that guilt seeking by accusation the death of him from whome hee had his lief. the father standes suspected, in fact, of what hees charg'd wth; and if the tryall shall discover it, it's onelie pittie, that he has liv'd soe longe to begett another monster. the crimes I feare to name being varietie of incest & worse. the delinquent the Earle of Castlehaven whoe about three daies since was brought hither to the Tower, and here remaines while the exaiaçons maie be pfitted: these are the children of these daies w^{ch} shewe the corruptions of the mother and if mercie to a miracle p'vent not, some strang fatalitie must followe it. but I hope there is yet a blessing left for Beniamine vpon the humiliation of his soule. the intercessor will not faile him, if hee faile not in his confidence, to whose wisdom we must leave the purging of his floore whoe in his owne time will doe it: when it is left for vs, our care must be but o^r dependance vpon him, and soe wth my service to yo^r selfe & yo^r good Ladie I rest
yo^r most faithfull frind

J. E.

Decemb^r 14, 1630.[Endorsed] 14^o Decembr. 1630To S^r oliver luke.

95. The Same to the Same.

S^a

Havinge nothinge to retorne yo^a for all yo^r favo^r
 but my thanckes. I did hope at this time to have made that
 exprefion by my sonnes and to have geven them yo^a as
 pledges of my service, but that opportunitie being deny'd
 mee by some secrett reason for their not coming to this
 towne, w^{ch} yo^a shall have hereafter, I must crave yo^r accep-
 tance for this paper and wth it yo^r pdon for the rest. the
 Sportes & leisures of this time, devour all busines & intel-
 ligence as if the yeare & world should end together, and
 noe intention were beyond it. noe newes is moving, feare
 has driven out hope in those that vse reflection and for the
 rest whoe ponder not their course, their daungers are the
 greater being not discern'd before hand, but all have a
 comunitie in the hazard; if towards the end of x^pas the
 p^rsent silence shalbe broken what maie be worthie of yo^r
 knowledge yo^a shall heare. the p^rsent w^{ch} yo^a sent has en-
 tertain'd diſſe of yo^r frindes, whoe often doe remember
 yo^a, and for mee, I hope yo^a are aſſur'd, by the obligacōn
 I acknowledg that yo^r meritt cannott be forgotten by him
 that is whollie yo^r

J. E.

vlt. Dec. 1630.

[Endorsed] vlt. Decembr. 1630

To S^r oliver Luke.

96. SIR JOHN ELIOT TO JOHN HAMPDEN:
January 7^o, 1630.

DEARE FRIND

what yo^a shall herein want of satisfaction for the doubtes yo^a have conceaved, must be by yo^r charitie imputed to the p^riudice of the time not mee, whoe cannott have a secrett not open to yo^r will; nor in reserv^dnes should nowe not even wth yo^r comaund, if my confidence in pap[er] were as great as my affection to yo^r selfe: but I dare not speake all thinges at such distance, where there maie be an interception in the waie, and I knowe my frind is not precipitat in his wishes: thus much therefore onelie for the p^rsent I will saie vntill I have the happines to see yo^a, that the occasion wth yo^a wonder at is from hence not elsewhere, both sodaine & important if my reason doe not faile mee, cominge from the malevolence of my fortune, but I hope wthout a power of hurtinge, to wth the resolu^cōn that I chann^gd was made but a p^rven^cōn. I have geuen an intimation alreadie to yo^r servantes at Oxford to take of all discouragement from their thoughtes whoe were not by my direc^cōn confined to the vniversitie thoughe stop^d from cominge hether. want of time for p^rpara^cōn onelie I beleve kept them from yo^a, to whome they cannott be more desirous to presente themselues, then I am willinge of that purpose. wherefore not doubtinge of yo^r p^rdon for the

rest vntill better opportunitie I cease in some hast resting
ever

yo^r most faithfull frind

J. E.

Januar 7^o 1630.

[Endorsed] 7^o Januar 1630

To M^r. Hampden.

97. Same to Same.

S^a

I cannott expresse sufficientlie howe much I am bound
to that free love of yo^r wth has such tendernesse for yo^r
frind, much lesse hope I ever to deserve it vnles yo^r will
impute the acknowledgmt for a meritt. and in that dutie,
it is not wthout unhappines to mee that there should be
anie thing soe secrett as to my frind at all times I maie
not openlie communicate, but I knowe wth whose iudgement
I doe deale, wth secures mee against all iealosie, and in that
respecte I shall reserve the quarrell wth my fortune vntill I
next shall¹ see yo^r to aunswaere yo^r affection, wth moves
soe freele to me. thus much shall serue for p^rven^on of all
trouble. though the cloud be reall & remayninge yet it im-
portes noe daunger. the aspecte beinge not for the inducem^t
of an evill, but for the checke and opposition of some good,
wth the divine power determines, and can turne malevo-
lence into vse. this I hope will satisfie yo^r p^rsent expecta-
tion, as it must make a confesion of my debt. the trans-

¹ "meete yo^r," erased.

cript w^{ch} yo^a mention is at yo^r will, wherein yo^a maie have confidence having the disposition of the owner to comaund in all thats his, w^{ch} stands referr'd to yo^r discretion that is sufficient caution & securitie for

J. E.

Jan. 13^o 1630

[Endorsed] 13^o Januar 1630

To M^r Hampden.

98. SIR JOHN ELIOT TO CAPT. THOMAS GODFREY:

Jan^r 13^o, 1630.

S^a

¹I am happie in all occasions to heare from yo^a and nowe ²doublie by this gentleman; wth yo^r letters to have the fruition of himselfe. I hope hee shall retorne as well to yo^a as hee has bene wth vs, where hee has not contracted the least signe of indisposition in his health nor anie ill in manners, if yo^r broth^r Valentine have not corrupted him. I confesse there maye be some dannger in that, in respecte of the strong infection w^{ch} hee has, but the cuntrie, and your Counsell will soone rectifie it, to whose tuition I must therefore recomend him; love him, as yo^a doe, his worth doth merit it, vse him as the image of yo^r goodnes, chaunge yo^rselues wth one another; I dare promise vnto either it shalbe wthout losse, naie the mutuall benefitt w^{ch} that transaction shall importe will have noegaine els to aunswear

¹ word erased.

² "and nowe," repeated & erased.

it. yo^a must p^don mee if I be envious³ to yo^a both out of affection vnto either. to yo^a I envie his p^sence & societie, for that happines of yo^a I envye him that single happines of either: noe other can be worthie of, but infinite were his happines that might inioye yo^a both. p^don me to wish though I cannott deserve it, and in that wish lett mee be p^sent wth yo^a. I shall duellie make it as a peece of my desires not to interrupt but to admire yo^r loves, and if I mighte to serve yo^a being devoted

Yo^r most faithfull frind

J. E.

I praeie represent my service to yo^r most good La: whose handes I kisse

Jan. 13^o 1630.

[Endorsed 13^o Januar 1630

To Mr. Godfry.

99. SIR JOHN ELIOT TO SIR BEVILL GRENVILLE:

28^o Feb., 1630.

S^a

the oportunitie of this messenger, beinge so faire an invitac^on, I cannott but desire to kisse y^r handes though it may seem a rudenes in a p^soner to p^resse vpon y^r libertie, w^{ch} has better entertainm^t then weake mentions, the p^refession of a friends indurance who maie have an affec^on to y^r service, but nott more, beinge p^rcluded of all vse.

³ word erased.

if y^a consider how longe it is since I had the happines to see y^a & that in all this tyme noe paper intelligence came from y^a, y^a maie pardon it wthout wonder that I p^rsume thus now, w^{ch} is but a formall way of begginge, a petition for that favour w^{ch} y^a weer wonte to grante me, & by Custome though not right I may Challenge at y^r handes. I hope I lesen not in y^r Charitie, & esteem; sure I am I doe not in the admiracōn of y^r worth w^{ch} has the full command of my affecōns, as of my indeavours, might they be vsefull to y^r service to w^{ch} I am devoted in all the faculties of

J. E.

Tower 28^o febr. 1630

[Endorsed] 28^o febr. 1630.

To Mr. Grenville.

100. SIR JOHN ELIOT TO SIR OLIVER LUKE :

22^d March, 1630/1..

S^a

I am now in phisicke, & soe farr, as I hope god will blesse it, towards the recovery of my health. the disaffecōn of my stomach is repaired, & I now cleanse a litle to take off all remainders. S^r M. H. is gone, & y^a iudge truly vpon him, that, as he now has carried it, much libertye has been ill lost: but for the rest I beleue y^a are mistaken, vpon whom his example has noe power, new reasons now ingageing them w^{ch} may divert that purpose. I have told my Cooke of the pvision y^a haue made, & the more willingly that y^r charge may keep that place. lett not the thought of wages trouble y^a. I shall in that

pointe not differ wth my frendes ; tis y^r favour I desire,
for w^{ch} I am

Y^r servant

J. E.

Tower 22^o Marcij 1630.

[Endorsed] 22^o Marcij 1630

To S^r oliver luke.

101. SIR JOHN ELIOT TO JOHN HAMPDEN:

22^d March, 1630.

DEER FRIND

Y^r love does still prevent me, & I wante opportunities to acknowledg it, soe farr am I from requitall. but y^r actions I know¹ depend not on the reward, but the virtue w^{ch} is perfect wthout me. ffor answer to y^r letters w^{ch} is the only satisfaction I can² make y^a, more then my praiers import, I am not les³ troubled, then at the intelligence⁴ they give me what to my frinde, what to my self to say vpon an accident soe vnhappy, soe vnworthie: I confesse it⁵ makes me in an agonie, &, as I⁶ greive⁷ ther has beene⁸ such occasion, I could wishe it were forgotten; everie circumstanc⁹ being belowe repaire that a larger discoverie¹⁰ to be given it would make the wounds¹¹ the larger.

Some of the words, &c. referred to by the underment^d numbers are obliterated

¹ many words here are erased.

² "give," erased.

³ word erased.

⁴ some words obliterated.

⁵ word erased.

⁶ d^o.

⁷ d^o.

⁸ " . . . of time of place of persons," erased.

⁹ some words erased.

¹⁰ d^o.

that of¹¹ such companie, such things should be suffer'd, when I take but the consideration of the place, all does resolve to this, what less could be expected? the good would not have bene ther. I am neither curious to enquire wher Button was¹² at that playinge of his game, nor how Williams or the sheriffe did containe themselves; nor¹³ who were the actors in this sceane, nor what plotts may be suspected; but this I know it was the¹⁴ follie of the patient, &, I hope, by God appointed, to instruct him for the future; wherein my care shalbe, more then for a prosecution vpon this. yet this I wonder at if Poole did such iustice as his man, why he had not¹⁵ vrg'd him to a confesion of his fellowes & a true narration of the fact. this in discretion & wthout much trouble might have been, wth some reflection¹⁶ vnto me, if not to certifie the particulars himself, yet by some other to have given me intimation. I should have had¹⁷ the like¹⁸ respect¹⁹ to him, or anie other gentleman²⁰ in like case, but²¹ not meritting, I pass by it, of w^{ch} we may thinke heerafter. for the present onlie this course I have intended, if y^e advise not otherwise. wthout noise²² to wthdrawe my charge from thence, & awhile retaine it neer me, if it may be, to worke some new impressions. I shall to that end send one, who shortly²³ shall attend y^e, & in²⁴ returning y^e howse²⁵ must be his waie, wher I praie

¹¹ some words erased.¹² d^o.¹³ "what," erased.¹⁴ word erased.¹⁵ "forc't," erased.¹⁶ "vpon," erased.¹⁷ word erased.¹⁸ words erased.¹⁹ "of," erased.²⁰ "of qualitie," erased.²¹ "as," erased.²² word erased.²³ "to," erased.²⁴ word erased.²⁵ d^o.

further me by a²⁶ preparation wth y^r counsell, on w^{ch} I shall worke wth the best art I may, but w^{thout} disadvantage to my frinde, & god I hope, will second my indeavors, to bleis what he has given me. In the reason y^e requier, vpon the²⁷ separation of my fellows, I can say little but what arises from the action. he that²⁸ has broke the heard draws noe other after him, nor²⁹ that I hear could he ther looke for company. but it proceeds from some new wisdom of his owne w^{ch} time or experience have procured him, noe reason that we³⁰ see, more then what soe long has beene reiected being emergent in the case. farewell deer frinde, let y^r goodnes pardon me that I am not more worthie of y^r favors, & assure y^rself that what I am, I am Y^rs in all³¹ faithfulness

J. E.

Tower 22^o Marcij 1630.[Endorsed] 22^o Marcij 1630.To M^r. Hampden.

102. JOHN HAMPDEN TO SIR JOHN ELIOT:

April 4^o, 1630/1.

The 'papers' referred to herein, was the MS. of 'The Monarchie of Man' (Vols. I. and II. of this Series of Eliot MSS.).

S^a

I hope you will receive yo^r sonnes both safe: & that God will direct you to dispose of them, as they may be trained vp for his service & to yo^r comfort. Some

²⁶ some words erased.²⁷ word erased.²⁸ word erased.²⁹ words erased.³⁰ "know," erased.³¹ word erased.

words I haue had wth your younger sonne : & giuen hime a tast of those apprehensions he is like to find with you : w^{ch} I tell hime future obedience to yo^r pleasure rather then iustification of past passages, must remoue. He professeth faire, & y^e ingenuity of his nature doth it without words. but you know vertuous actions flow not infallibly frō y^e flexiblest dispositions. there's onely a fitt subiect for admonition & gouernment to worke on, especially that w^{ch} is paternall. I confesse my shallownesse to resolute & therefore vnwillingnesse to say any thing, concerning his course, yet will I not giue ouer y^e consideration, because I much desire to see y^e spiritt rightly managed. but for yo^r elder I thinke you may with security returne hime in convenient time, for certainly there was nothing to administer fear of a plott. & in another action y^e concerned himeselfe, w^{ch} he'll tell you of, good satisfaction he receaued of y^e vice chancellors faire carriage towards hime. I searched my study this morning for a booke to send you of a like subiect to y^e of y^e papers I had of you, but find it not; as soone as I recouer it, I'll recommend it to yo^r view. When you haue finished y^e other part I praye thinke mee as worthy of y^e sight of it as y^e former & in both together I'll bewray my weaknesse to my friend by declaring my sense of them. That I did see is an exquisite nosegay composed of curious flowers bound together wth as fine a thredd but I must in y^e end expect hony frō my friend : somewhat out of those flowers digested; made his owne, & giuing a true tast of his owne sweetnesse, though for that I shall awaite a fitter time & place. The Lord sanc-

tify vnto you y^e sowrenesse of yo^r¹ present estate, & y^e comforts of yo^r posterity.

Yo^r euer y^e same asured friend

JO. HAMPDEN.

Apr. 4th.

103. SIR JOHN ELIOT TO SIR OLIVER LUKE :

19^o April, 1631.

S^r

I need not send y^e other letters then these messengers to expresse the obligacō wth I have for y^r much love & favour ; in acknowledgment whereof, they who are y^r best figure of my hart come now to kisse y^r handes, & if ther may be any service they are worthy of to receave y^r Commandes therein. the yonger I intend godwilling to send over into the Low countryes to S^r Edward Harward, whether I hope he will have passage this weeke wth my Lord Veer, wth does impose a hafst vpon him more then ordinary. the other is like wise prepareinge for ffraunce wth all the speed he may to serve in another Climate, but vnder the same lord, who does disperse & gather vp again, his pvidence ruling all. our state heer they cann relate, wth the same ignorance in some things wth most men are possest wth. Castlehaven was indicted at Salisbury of those facts he has been charged wth, his sonn that while being there entertained about his sport^e. his triall is appointed to be on

¹ a word erased.

munday next. the expectation is great vpon it, so may be the Consequence, as the guilt in lawe, & Conscience may be different. Watt long is a much sorrowing man for the losse of his wife, & so his others, suffers much, by the adicoß of this trouble. in all things else we are as y^a laste lefte vs, vnder the same pteccoß, in the same peace, & confidence, by the same spiritt, & mercie, to w^{ch} I recommend y^a and rest

y^r faithfull freind & servant

J. E.

Tower 19^o Apr. 1631.

[Endorsed] 19^o Apr. 1631

To S^r oliver luke.

104. SIR JOHN ELIOT TO JOHN HAMPDEN:

26^o April, 1631.

DEER FREND

having had some tast, such as this small experience can afford me, of the disposition of my sonnes, & in that, a larger Character of the exprefion of y^r favour; I am now come to a conclusion for their courses, as may render me most hope for the future advantage of their service. the yonger who in this case y^a know, must haue the honor of precedence, beinge more apt, I think, for action then for studdie, I haue design'd out for a souldier, & he is now in preparacōn for the Netherland, wher I hope he shall haue such direction, & aduise, as may better the vniversitie for his manners, & not be wthout some advantage for his

II.

Y

letters. his inclination seemes not ill in this short triall I haue had, but his affection moves most naturally this waie, w^{ch} beinge not vnworthy, I thought better to seek him helps therein, then, by a diversion to diuide his worke, & nature, w^{ch} maie haue worse effect^l. the elder knoweing this resolu^{co}n for his brother, I finde not desirous to returne from whence he came, it being as he takes it, a degree behinde the other, & I confesse my iudgment is not otherwise, therefore godwilling I purpose him for ffraunce; & both to be dispatcht wth all the conueynience that may be, though the yonger wilbe first, his passage being p^{ro}vided wth my lo: Veer, who intend^l to imbarke this weeke, & the other I shall not lose the first oportunitie p^{re}sented, haueing obtained his licence, w^{ch} is the only staie we haue. this I could not but impart to my deer frend, who has hitherto been so great a furtherance to this worke by the addition of his care; & now I must desire that his prayers may second it, for the Crowne of both o^r labours. you have putt me into an earnest expectation & longing for the booke y^e mention of resemblance to my papers. as it comes from my frend, I cannott but much covet it, any thinge giving me satisfaction wth that name, but as it has that subiect I must the more affect it, in hope to see some better light therein for the discouerie of my errors. they are many & great, I know, & must confesse it, for, wthout a miracle how should it be otherwise. the worke was done in hast as a recreation, not a busines in the midst of things more serious (which one day may be honor'd by y^e view) whereof this tooke but the tymes of intermission, as an in-

terierction of the fancie for entertainment, & delight, & that it was done by me, has sufficient to expresse it, from whom nothing but errors are emergent; yett as I haue I shall still follow to expose them to my frend, that by his correction vpon them I may reforme my selfe, who can iudge what is to be a composition, what a simple, & from the driest thyme extract & suck a sweetnesse. the other part I promised shalbe readie at y^r Comming, for I know noe other end they haue then such an entertainment of my frend, as a letter or Complement to meet him. & other light the[y] haue not, (nor was it design'd them in their birth) then what is given them by yo^r eyes, to w^{ch} they shutt & open as the heliotropium to the sunn. we had yesterdaie the triall of that lord, monster of men & nature, whome these walls haue held soe longe: I say we had it in the generall capacity of mankinde (wherein however vnworthie of my selfe, I am involv'd as part) all w^{ch} it does concerne. & vpon that triall ther did follow conviction, and a iudgment soe as nothing remaines, in the expectation of that cause, but the fatall execution, & division of the prey. I wish the true power be seen in the conversion of this sceane. ther is much for observation, even to wonder, both in the persons & the cause. the act^l, the inclinations, the resort^l, the discouerie, prosecution, & the iustice haue more then humane reason, for by that no contraries could concurr, nor things of liknes differ, w^{ch} are frequent in this peice, even to admiration & astonishment. particulars I know y^a will not looke for, such letters neither agreeing wth my Custome or the tyme. I hope ere long to see y^a

& for better service rendering my prayers for y^r health,
rest most affectionately

y^r frend

J. E.

Tower 26^o Apr. 1631.

[Endorsed] 26^o Apr. 1631

To M^r Hampden.

105. SIR JOHN ELIOT TO KNIGHTLEY:

27^o April, 1631.

S^a.

Accordinge to y^r advise I haue taken other resolu-
tions¹ for my sonnes & haue disposd them to such
courses as I conceave may best answear to the improue-
ment of their nature vpon the principles y^a haue given
them. the yonger being removed vpon the impresion of y^r
reasons, the elder could not be left that stepp behinde him
wthout some p^riudice to his tyme. however I thanke y^a for
y^r care in the instruc^ons y^a haue giuen them & I hope,
they will live to doe it, wth all respect & love. from me haue
this asurance, that if oportunitie be p^rsented, if I may at
any tyme be in power to doe a Courtesie for my frend, I
shall reteyne a readinesse vnlimitted & the trialls w^{ch} y^a
make shall proue me trulie y^r. the monies w^{ch} y^a tooke vp
of M^r Townsend are repaid. what else may be due to y^a or
any others I haue given order to my servant Hill to be
shortly wth y^a as he comes out of the Countrie, to discharge
it, & to dispose of such things as they left, w^{ch} they pray

¹ "both," erased.

y^a in the meane tyme to p^rserve. & thus wth the remembrance of my love I rest

Y^r assured frend
J. E.

Tower 27^o Apr. 1631.

[Endorsed] 27^o Apr. 1631
to M^r. Tho. Knightly.

106. SIR JOHN ELIOT TO SIR EDWARD HARWOOD:
30^o April, 1631.

(See Forster, ii. 585 onward.)

S^a

this bearer my sonne, haveing desire to spend some tyme in the profesion of a souldier, I haue presumed to addresse him vnto y^a, the generall reputation of whose worth, besides my knowledg in pticular, assuring me in the confidence of y^r favour. he is young, & vnacquainted wth the world, but I hope inclinable to advise, to wth his disposition hitherto has exprest noe inconformitie, or vnaptnesse. I pray receave him vnder y^r Colours, & Command, & give him that honor in his service, to haue y^r example still before him, & as occasion is, y^r Counsell, wth shall be an obligacō to vs both, & if at any tyme my poore indeavors may be vsefull, I shall thereon readilie declare my selfe

Y^r frinde & servant

J. E.

Tower London

vlt. Apr. 1631.

[Endorsed] vlt. Apr. 1631.

To S^r. Edward Harward.

107. SIR JOHN ELIOT TO SIR BEVILL GRENVILL:
5th May, 1631.

S^a

the desire I made beinge satisfied, I must now returne y^a an acknowledgment for that favour, w^{ch} was doubled in the second letters that y^a sent me comming to my handes as I was readinge of the former. y^r affeccoss therein mentiond to that lland y^a call desolat I cannot but Commend, soe farr am I from the p^riudice thereof; & I confesse the overture I made y^a at the request of others, had in my intention but that end; by their estimation to endear it. but y^r designe vpon it I know not how to censure, there beinge many considerations in that worke w^{ch} must be first resolv'd on. y^r owne wisdom I p^rsume, in a thinge of this importance, suffers y^a not hastilie to doe any thinge, & weighs aswell the Councells that are given y^a as they must weigh the action. noe man comp^rhend^e all knowledg in himselfe: all men are subiect to error by their confidence. & the iudgment is not greater, that makes a pfect act, then that discernes of Councells; successe beinge not more doubtfull vnto actions, then Councils are to men. my manner is not to obiect much where I cannot give my reasons, therefore in generall I shall rest wth this caution & advise. as Strato in Herodotus look't for the sunn riseinge in the west, lett y^r eye, in this intention, seeke for the conclusion in the east. reflect vpon the constellations of this place, & observe the aspect they carrie, w^{ch} have a large power & influence, & if y^a finde them ominous, or averse,

lett not your cost purchase y^r repentance. pardon this freedom in y^r frend that would say more if he were p^rsent wth y^a, not to disaffect but to prepare y^a for the worke, that the foundation be not sandie but worthie the superstructure of y^r vertues, w^{ch} haue noe servant more honoring, and admireinge then

J. E.

Tower 5^t. Maij. 1631

[Endorsed] 5th Maij 1631

To M^r. Grenvile.

108. JOHN HAMPDEN TO SIR JOHN ELIOT:

May 11th, 1631.

S^a

I am so perfectly acquainted with yo^r cleare insight into the dispositions of men, and ability to fitt them with courses sutable, that had you bestowed sonnes of mine as you haue done your owne, my iudgment durst hardly have called it into question: specially when in laying downe y^e designe you haue prevented y^e objections to be made against it: for if M^r Rich: Elliott will, in the intermissions of action, adde study to practise & adorne that liuely Spiritt with flowers of contemplation, he^{le} raise our expectations of another S^r Edw: Veere, that had this character, all summer in the field all winter in his study, in whose fall fame makes this kingdome a great looser: and hauing taken this resolution frō Counsaile with y^e highest wisdom (as I doubt not but you haue) I hope & pray y^e same power will crowne it with a blessinge answerable to your wish.

The way you take with my other friend declares you to be none of y^e Bp of Exeters converts, of whose minde neither am I superstitiously: but had my opinion bine asked I should (as vulgar conceits vse to do) haue showed my power rather to raise obiections then to answer them; a temper betweene Fraunce & Oxford might haue taken away his scruple with more advantage to his yeares: to visite Cambridge as a free man¹ for variety & delight, & there intertained himeselfe till y^e next Spring: when vniversity studyes & peace had bine better settled then I heare it is: for although he be one of those that if his age were looked for in no other booke but that of the minde would be found no ward if you should dy to morrow: yet tis a great hazard meethinkes to find so sweet a disposition guarded with no more experience amongst a people whereof many make it their religion to be superstitious in impiety and their behaiour to be affected in ill manners: but God who onely knowes y^e periods of life, and oportunityes to come, hath designed hime (I hope) for his owne service betime, & stirred vp yo^r prouidence to husband hime so early for great affaires: then shall he be sure to find hime in France, that Abraham did in Gerar, & Joseph in Egipt, vnder whose wing alone is perfect safety. Concerning y^e Lord who is now reported to be as deepe in repentance as he was profound in sinne: the papers &c. I shall take leaue frō your favour & my streight of time to be silent till y^e next weeke, when I hope for y^e happinesse to kisse your

¹ a word erased.

handes; and to present you with my most humble thanks
for yo^r letters, w^{ch} confirme y^e observation I haue made in
the progresse of affections: that it is easier much to winne
vpon ingenuous natures then to meritt it. This they tell
mee I haue done of yours. and I account a noble purchas:
w^{ch} to improue with y^e best services you can commaund and
I performe shall be y^e care of

yo^r affectionate friend & servant

JO: HAMPDEN.

Hampden,
May 11th 1631.

present my service to M^r Long. M^r Valentine &c.

do not thinke by what I say y^e I am fully satisfyed of your
younger sonne^s course intended, for I haue a crotchett out
of y^e ordinary way: w^{ch} I would haue acquainted you with
if^s I had spoken with you before. he had gone but ame
almost ashamed to communicate.

[Endorsed] 11^o Maij 1631

M^r Hampden.

109. SIR JOHN ELIOT TO JOHN HAMPDEN:

31st May, 1631.

S^a

this gentleman M^r Wyan, has honor'd me wth an
opinion, that my word, & recommenda^on is yett vsefull
& to that end craves this addresse vnto y^e selfe. I confesse

² "he had," erased.

II.

Z

in this pticular I am not altogether wthout hope, haveinge experience of y^r Charitie; but it is that that warrants it, not my merit, w^{ch} in all cases severd from y^r favour, were a wonder. he is one whom in much triall I haue found amongst the faithfulest, & most affectionate of my frindes. lett him haue that admision to y^r Creditt, and if y^a thinke me worthie of that opinion, shew it on him, who comes as my hand, for the reception of y^r Curtesie, & has power to make that addition to the debt w^{ch} y^a haue imposed on

J. E.

from my summer house ith Tower
vlt. Maij 1631

[Endorsed] vlt. Maij 1631.

To M^r Hampden.

110 THOMAS KNIGHTLEY TO S^a JOHN ELIOT:

June 6^o, 1631.—College Bill.

WORTHY S^a

my best respects & obseruance p^rmis'd & I must craue pardon for my slacknes in answearing yo^r kinde letter; occasioned by my extraordinary employments, (w^{ch} I desired yo^r sonn John to certifye you of, & to plead my excuse) these being now ouer, I am at more leasure to obserue my freindes; amongst the rest I esteeme you none of the least; & should bee glad to haue the opportunity of expresing that seruice, & respect w^{ch} ¹

¹ "I am," erased.

by yo^r former fauores, & p^rsent p^rmisses I am ingaged most readily to p^rforme. The newes of yo^r sonne Richards remoue was most welcome ; but as for yo^r sonne Johns, I could haue beene well content (if it might haue^a stood with conueniency) it should not haue beene so speedy : had I receiued but the least intimation of this yo^r resolution, I should haue taken a littell more paines in furnishing him wth some other grounds of learning, w^{ch} hee wants ; but my hope is that his owne industry by gods blessing will supply that defecte. As for the things left in their chamber, I desire to heare as soone as may bee, how you purpose to dispose of them ; In the meane time they shalbe safe. The notes I sent, you may remember amounted to 32^l. 12^s. 4^d. out of w^{ch} subtracted 30^l receiued of M^r Townsend their remained due for the former quarter^s 2^l. 12^s. 4^d. Besides for the last quarter these pticulars.

Imprimis your sonne John, Batles for

6 weekes	2 ^l . 11 ^s . 10 ^d .
Itē dutys	0. 2. 10 ^d .
Itē landrefse	0. 2 ^s . 6 ^d .
Itē chamber	0. 6 ^s . 3 ^d .
Itē servitour	0. 6 ^s . 0
Itē mending a paire of stockings (w ^{ch} were sent to bee mended at his going away)	0. 0. 4 ^d .
Itē the cariage of 2 trunks to y ^e caryers .	1 ^s . 0
Itē introductiō to astronomy (left vnpaid at Bookbinders)	3 ^d .

^a "beene thought," erased.

empty letters in that I p^rsum'd on yo^r asurance of me to be the more, & in that these parts haue afforded so little worthy yo^r knowledge. O^r second fearefull Co^misn is now past, & since by y^e seruant you are pleas'd to demand it of me, I will p^rsent you¹ (tho there be not many things in it worth the obseruation) with the relation of the progresse of it. We were all call'd togeather (but in severall dayes followinge) at Bodmin. After the Co^misn was read we were like to depart without as much as any speech offerd us ; much tyme was spent in strayinge Curt'sy betwene the Son, & the ffather, & I thinke we had bin deceiud of o^r expectation had not the Courtier brought downe some of his court phrases in exchange for o^r mony. I enterpted their longe silence to the best, thinkinge they ment by it that they thought the matter such as no Cornish man would open his mouth in it, & therefore fittest for a stranger, who for ought that I could perceiue directed his words more to those that should haue spoaken then to us that should haue heard. We were directed the first day that such as would not compound should giue their answers in writinge, a course w^{ch} if they had held thorough would haue prou'd little to their advantage. The Hund : of East was first cal'd in w^{ch} (making choise of the pishes & men fittest for composition) they made pretty store of mony, till S^t Germans according to y^e direc^{ti}on giuing their severall papers had shewen y^e way of non composition (for, of 28 returnd not one compounded) Lanrake, & Landilpe

¹ a word erased.

follow'd the p^rsident, upon w^{ch} they thought it best to finish that dayes service without calling out that one hundred. The West hundred had not many. Pider & Stratton very few; Powder somewhat more, but the greatest proportion rayesd came from Penwith & Kerrier the 2 farthest. the feare of it being perchance encreasd by the remotenes of its place; or it may be lying under Command of y^e Castle, they thought it not wisdom to hold out. The totall amounts not to much more then 2000^l; of w^{ch} the most of it comes frō the meaner sort of people, & such as I p^rsume scarce haue the value. Some with great words & threatings, some with perswasion (wherein S^r B: did all) were drawne to it: I was like to haue bin complemented out of my mony, but that knowing with whom I had to deale, I held, whilst I talk'd with them my hands fast in my pockett. You will wonder to heare what things we had here return'd for Kn^t but that nothing is now to be wondered at. S^r if any thing ly here where in I may serue you I shall take it an hono^r to be commanded, & be assur'd that as you suffer for others so there are some others that suffer for you, amongst w^{ch} is

yo^r seruant

W. S.

112. JOHN HAMPDEN to SIR JOHN ELIOT:

June 8^o, 1631.

S^a

I receaued yo^r comāunds by y^e hands of M^r Wian, and was glad to know by them that anothers word had

power to commaund yo^r faith in my readinesse to obey you w^{ch} mine it seemes had not. If you yet lack an experience, I wish you had putt mee vpon y^e test of a worke more difficult and important, y^t yo^r opinion might be changed into beliefe. That man you wrote for I will vnfainedly receaue into my good opinion, and declare it really when he shall haue occasion to putt mee to y^e prooffe; I cannot trouble you with many words at this time; make good vse of y^e bookes you shall receaue frō mee & of yo^r time, be sure you shall render a strict account of both to

yo^r euer assured friend and servant

Jo: Hampden.

present my service to Mr. Long
I would faine heare of his health

¹
Hampden

June 8th 1631

113. CAPT. THOMAS GODFREY TO SIR JOHN ELIOT:
June 21st, 1631.

NOBLE S^a

I conceiue the deathe of o^r greate Sanderson, hath stayed my buisnes of Knightinge, vtill some other of his condition shall informe agaynst me, the w^{ch} I doe not muche value, neither shall I soe muche as thinke of them, althoughe I doubte not but this Countrey will afforde manie

¹ some words obliterated here.

whom I will leaue as they are; yo^r freinds are well:
 Sr Willm Armyne, wth his good lady, hathe beene to visitte
 his poore brother Kingston, wth whome he spent more
 tyme, then vsuallie his lo^{re} freinds doe, And yo^r moste
 faythfull seruant, makes good the ffriers, obseruinge the
 base wayes of a Corporation, somtimes visittinge the little
 Lorde Willoughbie (whoe brought an Ague from Lon-
 don) and home agayne. If wishes were powerfull, I shoulde
 be often wth you, howeuer my hartie well wishes, and
 daylie praiers, doe and shall euer attende you, the w^{ch} I doe
 at this tyme (wth my seruice) present vnto you euer
 restinge

Yo^r moste faithfull seruant
 to Comāde

Tho: Godfrey

My wyfe doth wishe you all
 happines, I desire my respect may be
 remembred to M^r Longe, if he still be of you.

ffriers neere Grantham

June 21th 1631

114. SIR JOHN ELIOT TO KNIGHTLEY:

27^o June, 1631.

S^a

y^r letters and y^r present are at difference, w^{ch} shall
 import most for your Charitie, & my happinesse. y^r Letters
 are the expresse Character of yo^r love, & that gives noe
 litle satisfacōn to y^r frend, who has noe avarice but in
 that; y^r present is a token of y^r favour, & an exposition

of the misterie whence that favour comes, w^{ch} shewes a double happinesse both in the effect & cause. tis a great happinesse when I thinke how much y^e love him that deserves soe litle; tis a farr greater as tis mov'd by the great mover, of whom I deserve farr lesse; naie of whom only the Contrarie is deserved: that that great love should be for hate, that that great love in heaven should move like love on earth, that love should kindle love, as fier ingenders fier, for the vse and comfort of the vnworthy, as it imports happinesse it imports wonder & cannot have sufficient of admiration or acknowledgment. I shall add it toe the accompt of my large debt, for w^{ch} I cann p'tend but a gratefull acceptation, haveinge noe meritt or requitall to returne but the thanks of

y^e faithfull frinde & brother

J. E.

Tower 27^o Junij 1631

[Endorsed] 27^o Junij 1631

To M^r Knightly.

115. SIR JOHN ELIOT TO CAPT. GODFREY:

29^o June, 1631.

S^a

I hope yo^r great Lo: has carried wth him all the intention of y^e trouble, for the knighthood, and that wth him that busines nowe is buried. there is little here now acted in that sceane. the harvest was in y^e Cuntrye; and it is thought the Co^{rt} will not be at more trouble for the gleaninges. those that putt themselues vpon the iudgem^t of

II.

A A

the lawe, stand yet wthout p^riudice therein : the Sunne
seemes more powerfull then the windes, for those that are
not flattered from their monies doe retaine them; and
though there be a threatning of some Stormes, yet the men
are safe. this bearer can geve yo^r the state of o^r affaires.
from whome having receav'd the hono^r of yo^r letter & his
companie I could not but returne this paper in acknow-
ledgem^t of them both resting

yo^r most faithfull servant

J: E.

rep^rsent my humble service to yo^r Ladie

Tower 29th Julij 1631.

[Endorsed] 29th Julij 1631

To M^r Godfrey.

116. JOHN HAMPDEN TO SIR JOHN ELIOT:

June 29th, 1631.

S^r

You shall receaue y^e booke I promised, by this
bearers immediate hand : for y^e other papers I presume to
take a litle, and but a litle respitt. I haue looked vpon y^e
rare piece onely with a superficiall view : as at first sight to
take y^e aspect, and proportion in y^e whole : after with a
more accurate eye to take out y^e lineaments of euery part :
t^h were rashnesse in mee therefore to discouer any iudg-
ment, before I haue ground to make one. This I discern
that t^his as compleate an image of¹ y^e patterne as can be

¹ some words erased.

drawne by lines. a liuely character of a large minde. The subiect, method, & exprefions excellent and homogeneall, and to say truth (sweet heart) somewhat exceeding my comendations: my words cannot render them to the life: yet (to show my ingenuity rather then witt) would not a leſſe modell haue giuen a full representation of that ſubiect? not by diminution but by contraction of parts: I deſire to learne: I dare not ſay. The variations vpon each particular ſeeme many. all I confeſſe excellent. The fountaine was full: y^e channell narrow: y^e may be y^e cauſe: or that y^e author imitated Virgill, who made more verſes by many: then he intended to wright; to extract a² iuſt number. Had I ſeene all his: I could eaſily haue bidd him make fewer: but if he had bidd mee tell which he ſhould haue ſpared,² I had bine appoſed. So ſay I of theſe exprefions: and that to ſatisfy you not my ſelfe; but that by obeying you in a comãund ſo contrary to my owne diſpoſition; you may measure how large a power you haue ouer

JO: HAMPDEN.

Hampden, June 29. 1631

Recomend my ſeruice to Mr. Long. & if S^r. ol: Luke be in towne: expreſſe my affections to him in theſe words. y^e firſt part of y^e papers you had by y^e hands of B Valentine. long ſince. if you heare of yo^r ſonnes or can ſend to y^m lett mee know.

² word erased.

² word erased.

117. SIR JOHN ELIOT TO HIS SONNE JOHN:

30^o June, 1631.

SONNE

having wth much satisfaction by yo^r lr^{es} the as-
 surance of yo^r safe passage & arrivall¹ vnto Paris, I take it
 as a p^rdition to my hopes that the same power w^{ch} brought
 yo^a hither, will not leave yo^a, but in all thinges be a supin-
 tendent of yo^r actions. and at the revolution of yo^r time
 guard yo^r reto^rne againe. my prayers are still wth yo^a and
 what els maie be expected for yo^r good shall not be want-
 ing in my purpose. the proposition of allowance w^{ch} I made
 yo^a was not definite but exp^rsive, and yo^a maie remem-
 ber the reason that I gave yo^a of my care, w^{ch} had reflec-
 tion vpon others, but made the first p^rspect on yo^r self. it
 is yo^r good, my affection seekes for, and by that the like is
 p^rmis'd to the rest. in the happines & advauncem^t of yo^r
 brothers & sisters much of yo^r happines will consist and
 yo^r frugalitie must be an opportunitie to that, for w^{ch} I gave
 yo^a but a caution in the summe, wthout restriction if there
 were necessitie of more. to that end yo^a know was the
 creditt yo^a receav'd, whose measure was the limitt of yo^r
 discretion: but because yo^a crave it more p^rticuler these
 are for resolution in that pointe. I have p^rvs'd yo^r noate,
 and by the rule of those p^rportions doe acknowledg a hun-
 dred p^rowndes too little. Yo^r studies and exercises I would
 not have neglected, w^{ch} are for the ornament & abilitie both

¹ "at," erased.

of the mind & bodie, and a maine part of the intention w^{ch} yo^r travell for. onelie the riding has little profit in the vse, though it be of reputation in that Cuntry where their Cavallerie is their strength, it beinge to an Englishman but a worke of recreation and but lasting in that Meridian; however therein lett yo^r owne liking guide yo^r, I onelie intimate y^e difference of the places. ffor yo^r accommodation in all; what shalbe sav'd of 200^l, shalbe imputed to v^r thrift: soe much I am willing to allowe yo^r for the first yere in hope the next maie be more cheape. what maie be requisite for yo^r qualitie can have noe obstruction in my will, as my confidence is wthout limitt, in yo^r modestie. Lett me heare as often from yo^r as yo^r can. your l^{ives} are still wellcome, and when there is anie intelligence of thinges newe, wee are here gladd to knowe it, making the iudgem^t of o^rselues out of the state of others. I have not yet heard from yo^r brother since his goeing, all in the Cuntrie I thanck god are well. I hope yo^r shall all contynewe soe till o^r meeting, through his blessing that p^{ro}tectes yo^r whoe is the rock & castell of

Yo^r ffather

J. E.

Tower. vlt. Junij 1631.

118. SIR JOHN ELIOT TO KNIGHTLEY :

9^o July, 1631.

S^r

I haue deferr'd a while the answer of y^r letters vpon an intention of my servant Hills returne that way in his iorney to the Country : but other businesse now p^{re}venting

him this footman comes to receave the furniture of the Chamber wth my sonnes lefte, to whom I pray deliver it, & by him y^e shall receave the monies due vpon your notes, w^{ch} is three pownds ninepence, & twelve pounds more for tuition, w^{ch} as I thinke is the summ that is behinde, ther beinge in all three half yeares, vpon the accompt whereof one was paid before. I know not in the pportion whether my sonnes informd me rightly, because from y^e¹ I never had demand: but if in this I be mistaken & come short of y^e expectance, I shalbe ready vpon noatice, to reforme it, haueing noe meaninge to be lelse thankfull for y^e favours, then the most affected in that kinde; & yett my love shall² be vnlimited in any office I may doe y^e to prove me further

y^e asured frind

J. E.

Tower 9^o Julij 1631.

[Endorsed] 9^o Julij 1631

To M^r Tho. Knightly.

119. SIR JOHN ELIOT TO SIR BEVILL GRENVILE:

10th July, 1631.

S^a

I have a suite in lawe wth S^r Richard Edgcombe, of some value, w^{ch} comes to triall at Lanceston this afsises, wherein it is in y^e opportunitie to doe me favor, w^{ch} for y^e owne worth & goodnes, though seconded by. noe desert in

¹ "I had," erased.

² a word erased.

me, I shall now presume to crave. y^a know the disadvantages I have, if it depend vpon the iudges, & what incertainties, if not more, are implied in common iuries. the presence & practise of my adversarie, wth his sollicitous adherents, & the reputation of their Justiceships, compar'd wth my nothing & that absent: it is not wthout reason that I seeke the assistance of y^r arme, to add some weight vnto that number w^{ch} must make the decision of our cause. ther are neer y^a some of discretion & sufficiencie returnd vpon the iurie, whose integrities may¹ counterpoise those dangers. my desire is but that y^a will (though they attend not vsually in such services) ingage them to appeer, & what shalbe the resolution of their iudgments vpon the hearing of the cause, shalbe a satisfaction vnto me, who covett nothing (though in the want of all things) but what shalbe dylie thought myne owne (if I may yet claime proprietie) & that, but by y^r consent & furtherance, & to y^r service, being in all things devoted

Yo^r most faithfull frind & brother

J. E.

Tower x^{mo} Julij 1631.

[Endorsed] x^{mo} Julij 1631

To M^r Grenville.

¹ "be a," erased.

² "devoted," erased.

120. SIR JOHN ELIOT TO JOHN HAMPDEN:

19^o July, 1631.S^a

the treatise w^{ch} y^a recommended to my handes I haue supficially past over & putt it to transcription in obedience to y^r order. the first part of my papers w^{ch} y^a had I receaued long since by Valentine ; the others I hope are by this tyme Comming to me, being required & expected by another, from whom they shall retorne at any tyme to y^r service. the Censure w^{ch} y^a give them is some part of the satisfac^{co}n w^{ch} I crav'd but not all the office of my frende. y^a render it but in generalls, w^{ch} conclude not, & w^{ch} such an allay of fauour, if not more, that the p^rparation must hinder the operation of the Phisicke if the naturall affection of the body does not help it. to apply it to the last part, I cannot wthout [illegible word] haueing noe Copy, nor a head that cann containe it. to reduce it to the former, I may pvert y^r meaninge, haueing noe rule to warrant it. that, y^a knowe, wholie treats of pollitickes, whose pprietic it is, as I take it, to be handled by authorities, & I remember not, amongst the latter writers, where I haue seen it otherwise. he that y^a sent me has it soe, of whom we will speake hereafter ; in w^{ch} kinde if ther be more then necessary, that supfluity may be lefte, whereof some I haue purged already, as it was obnoxious to my sence, & soe the rest desire the better indication of y^r reason, wherein y^a must deale freely & p^ricularly. of y^r servants beyond the seas, we haue yett small intelligence. the Souldier I haue not heard

from since his going; his brother hath sent twice since his arrive at Parris, wher I thanke God hees well, as I am hopefull of the other, and at their opportunities I know y^e shall hear from both. the affaires of the Cardinall in ffrance haue a dayly growth & exaltatiou & his oppisits goe downe. some new messengers to the pliam^t came lately from the Mounsier but were committed wthout heering. the L. M. is still restrain'd & kept at distance from the Court, if not retired (as now we report it heer) by escape vnto the Archdutches; & all the leser starrs & plannett^e of that Hemisphear are wthout light, while the greatnesse of the fauoritt triumphes in power & glory like the sunn in full meridian. the p^rsent expectation of this place is vppon the Comittment of the Scotsmen. Mackey & Ramsey are our fellow prisoners in the tower. between them wholie the contestation does now rest, vpon a single affirmacōn & deniall, w^{ch} its said, shalbe decided by a Cumbate. our Martial preparations are Compleat, the Marquis is gone, or shipt, fortune & he are entred in the list, whose successe depends on hope. we that haue noe employm^t haue noe troubles, but wth that nothing inioy the security of o'selves. hazards ther are not wher ther are noe adventures; & as the gaine is lesse in the dull art of husbandry, the safety is much more then in that windie marchandise w^{ch} insults vpon the waves: soe wth us that only intend the dresing of our gardens, our hart^e, & the feild of our affections, & desires; though wee haue not that splendor & magnificence, w^{ch} greatnesse does import yet our tranquillity may content vs; our more certaine way to happinesse would make us certainly seem more ffortunate,

II.

B B

if we knew it. y^a, deer frinde I know are a master in this trade, & honor & not envie the p^fection y^a haue gott. scorne not to admitt others to that society in w^{ch} noe man is refus'd; but afford them some instruc^{co}ns for institu^{co}n in that virtue. in charity to all, this is a dutie w^{ch} y^a owe, to me in pittie. the obliga^{co}n is more strickt, whoe haueing more need then all men, am more affected wth y^r fauours, as being intirely more, if wthout p^riudice I may say soe
y^r frinde & servant

J. E.

Tower 19^o July, 1631.[Endorsed] 19^o July, 1631

To Mr. Hampden.

121. SIR JOHN ELIOT TO SIR OLIVER LUKE:

21st July, 1631.

S^a

the nagge y^a writte of staies not for me butt for it selfe. I cannot yett be fitted for our purpose. I haue seene one but dare not accept or recommend him. I am dailie in pursuite to give satisfac^{co}n to y^r care, w^{ch} will not be long unansweard. newes from abroad we haue not: all things in o^r intelligence houldinge the condition they had. out of the Low countries ther has come yett noe letters, soe farr as to intimate the alteration of their place. ffrom ffrance I heard last weeke, wher the greatnesse of the Cardinall is still groweing, & the ffortune of his oppisitts is in continuall declina^{co}n; at home the expectation is on the Scottish businesse, w^{ch} is reduc't to a single affirma^{co}n &

deniall betweene Mackey & Ramsey, who are now heer p'soners in the Tower, & as its said, must decide the controversie by Combate, w^{ch} most men are confident of, but some doubt it. this is thought to be the greatest danger in the case. our Souldiers are shipt & gone. & wth vs now ther is nothing but rest & silence. the Minte has not yett stird since y^r being heer. the first opportunity shalbe offered I will bespeake y^r pence, as I shall alwaies doe y^r paternoster for

Y^r frend & servant
J. E.

Tower 21^o Julij 1631.

[Endorsed] 21^o Julij 1631

To S^r Oliver Luke.

122. JOHN HAMPDEN TO SIR JOHN ELIOT:

July 27^o, 1631.

DEARE S^a

I receaued a letter from you the last weeke for w^{ch} I owe you ten, to countervaille those lines by excelfe in number that I cannot equall in weight: But time is not mine now nor hath bine since that came to my hands: in yo^r favour therefore hold mee excused. This bearer is appointed to present you with a Buck out of my paddock, w^{ch} must be a small one to hold proportion with y^e place and soyle¹ t^e was bred² in. Shortly I hope (if I do well to hope) to see you: yet durst I not prolong y^e expectation of yo^r

¹ "it," erased.

² "in," erased.

papers. you haue concerning them layde commaunds vpon mee^s beyond my ability to giue you satisfaction in. but if my apology will not serue, when wee meete I will not decline y^e service though to y^e bewraying of my own ignorance, w^{ch} yet I hope yo^r loue will couet

Yo^r ever assured friend

and Servant

Jo. HAMPDEN.

Hampd^s

July 27

I am heartily glad to heare my friend is well in Fraunce. Captaine Waller hath bene in these parts, who I haue seene but could not entertaine, to my shame & sorrow I speake it.

123. SIR JOHN ELIOT TO HIS SON JOHN:

1st August, 1631.

Jo:

To y^r former letters I dispatcht an answer by the next conveyance, w^{ch} I doubt not but y^e haue receaued & therein satisfac^{ti}on to the pticulars y^e desir'd: to y^r last of the fifth of Julij (but I know not of what stile) these come now to tell y^e the acceptance w^{ch} they haue, and though they bring noe other, yett that they are welcome wth the newes that y^e are well. the first tyme I heard from y^r brother was this weeke, whoe I thanke god inioyes his health, and will I hope doe well, if himself hinder not. ffor the Amb: respect him in his manner, y^e shall not need

^s a word erased.

his courtesie, what might haue been meritted by his loue should haue had an acknowledgment that is equall, and the neglect I doubt not, may yett be answer'd by the like. I yett observe not an alteration in y^r hand: my thinkes y^r should perceauce there is some reason more then ordinary that I touch soe small a string soe oft. Certainly if in the letter and the forme y^r writeings take not something from others whose knowledg & experience is more the boyish or pendenticke, it wilbe held a defect of imitation, w^{ch} is the only morall mistress of our life, and wthout that the iudgment wilbe doubted. Lett me know by y^r next how y^r man frames himselfe, and what satisfactō the place affords y^a. we heer are in the same condiōn y^a lefte vs; ffree I thanke god, though prisoners, wthout captivity of the minde. our prayers & speculations are at liberty, by w^{ch} we invoke and celebrate y^r happines of our frends, wherein the blessing of y^r hopes and labours is still sought for by

Y^r most loveing father

J. E.

Tower London

1st August 1631.

[Endorsed] 1^o Augusti 1631

To. J. Eliot

124. SIR JOHN ELIOT TO KNIGHTLEY:

11^o August, 1631.

S^a y^r letter found me yesterday soe hard at bowles as I had not then tyme to answer it, yett an occasion is

p'sented to M^r Valentine and M^r Long to charge me wth the comānd of givēg their service to y^e, w^{ch} besides myne owne, this paper must import. I thanke god we are all heer well and satisfied wth the liberty we haue. the intelligence of our frend^e healthes comforts vs, w^{ch} wee pray for, wherein y^r interest is too great to be forgotten by

J. E.

Tower xj^o August. 1631.

[Endorsed] xj August. 1631

To M^r Knightly

125. SIR JOHN ELIOT TO HIS SON JOHN :

1st Sep. 1631.

SONNE.

I haue receaued and considered of y^r letters w^{ch} mention your desire and reasons to pafse¹ speedily into Italy. good company I know, is a choise thinge, and as a pleasure, soe an advantage in y^r travells, w^{ch} I presume y^a studie not for name only, or the affection of some title, but as it meetes wth virtue, and then its truly valuable, that beinge the Crowne and dignity of all honor. the opportunity I confesse w^{ch} such company does p'sent is a faire motive for the iorney, but the tyme I doubt not yett seasonable to answer it. Autum in those parts is most dangerous to strangers; the abundance of their fruites, the corruption of their aer through the strife of heat and moisture, and the naturall disposiçōn of all bodies to sick-

¹ "into Italy," erased.

nes & infection in the returne of blood, makes it at first more fearefull, wth by acquaintance wth the place taken in fitt tyme, is wthout doubt or trouble. besides the plauge has raigned generally in that Country, & some townes still are visited, by wth both the aer and howses may be yett suspected vntill some frosts correct them, soe as I finde noe safety p^romised in this tyme neither for y^a nor others, soe p^rchance vpon better considerations will resolve [you] to stay till springe. againe that reason wth y^a give for the advantage of y^r language, has its truth meerly in the Contrary; for if wthout knowledge in the ffrench y^a first shall seeke the Italian, that wilbe then lesf pleasant, and soe more difficult, by wth the more necessary wilbe left to be then gain'd, when p^rchance ther wilbe lefse leasure for it: whereas if y^a shall yett gaine some p^rfec^on in the ffrench, and then passe into Italie, what y^a ther lose, wilbe regain'd againe at y^r returninge homewards and y^a become a master in the tongue. this wintter spent in ffrence I hope wilbe enough for preparation and then at springe, y^a may passe from thence to Italie. ffor the danger that's pretended in y^r travell in those parts only wth private company, I am confident ther is noe reason, but what the sicknes may occasion, & that admitts noe priviledge. the territories of the Church I hope y^a will avoid (those I confesse are dangerous, as all Spain, wth by noe meanes I cann allowe y^a once to enter) but other parts are free and peaceable as in England, wher wth discretion, y^a may as much reteyne y^r safetie. ffor the present troubles in ffrence I conceaue litle cause of doubt. to strangers they import noe hazard or ad-

venture, more then volūtarily they incurr, but much advantage of knowledge and experience they may yeild, wth I did thinke the hope and spirit of that gentleman from whom y^a receaued that argument would not haue declin'd. thus much in answear to y^r letter w^{ch} I make only an advise. I wonder y^a never wrote since y^r goeing over of Mounsier Durant. his wife inquires heer for him, whom I would gladly satisfie, as know[ing] how y^a haue agreed. be carefull in y^r religion, make y^r deuotions frequent. seeke y^r blessing from aboue. drawe y^r imitation to good patternes. lett not vaine pageantries deceaue y^a. prepare y^r estimaçõn by y^r virtue w^{ch} y^r owne carriage and example must acquire ; wherein y^a haue asistants, the most earnest prayers & wishes of

Y^r loveinge father

J. E.

Tower 1^{mo} Septembr: 1631

[Endorsed] 1^o Septembr: 1631

To J. Eliot.

126. SIR JOHN ELIOT TO SIR BEVILL GRENVILE:

17^o Sep., 1631.

S^a

haueinge receaued y^r papers & letter, sent me by M^r Ascott inclosed in another of his, out of Oxfordshire, I haue wth that litle iudgment that is myne, perused them to the utmost and followd them wth such considerations as a businesse of that nature doth require. first I haue weighed y^r reasons and desires: then I haue studied, what in this

tyme I might, to know the former vse therein, whence y^a may see what latitude is before y^a, & then be directed by y^rself. to build there is a free liberty in all men, but not to fortifie, wthout leave. the proportion is not stinted either by reason or example, but they may enlarge themselves at pleasure vpon their owne interest and proprieties. Keyes are vsuall and vnquestioned made for honor or advantage. either a publicke good or a private benefit therein, has sufficient warrant for such workes: & if the word offend, though their capacitie be large, they may beare the name of harbors. but noe color of fortification is allowable. the Duke of Glocester building at Greenwich in the tyme of H. 6. was faine to haue licence, *muros illos battellare*, w^{ch} could not be authenticke but by patent or by parliament; & therefore his grant was turn'd into an act. such is the right in all tymes, the caution more in some; whose ielousies interpret that all longe eares are hornes. the Importance of y^r Iland was thought much in elder tymes, & ther was a Constable & other officers to gaurd it. it seemes to haue beene much peopled & inhabited, & a care had of them, as for the preservation of the place, in the daies of H. 3. I finde by the records of that tyme much trouble was vpon it. one Mariscis a Baron of that tyme, made an attempt & tooke it, vpon w^{ch} afterwards two severall writts were granted, the one for the strengthening of the fort, the other for y^a reenforceinge of the gaurds. these were 26^o & 27^o of y^t raigne, of w^{ch} for y^r better satisfaction I send y^a heer the Copies. By this y^a may see there was a great consideration of the place, & while it was fortified by whom it

IL

C C

was Comanded ; w^{ch} like wise at Arwanicke is made plaine, w^{ch} if the land-right carried it, should be in Killigrewes Command. but wher princes fortifie, their owne men doe manage it, & seldome. or never was it pmitted vnto subiects. yet it is lawfull to defend that w^{ch} is ones owne : though he doe not fortifie he may keep it : w^{ch} what strength I may guard me in my howse, I may secure me in an Iland. all resistance to an enemy is safe wher ther is a cleer openesse to the State. leaueing those words then of fortification & inharboringe, I see not but y^e may pfect the worke y^e haue begunn, for the generall good & benefitt. to make a suite in that is but to se[cure] a trouble ; a licence w^{thout} patent is but voluntary, and stands but at the pleasure of the granter. it import^{eth} noe warrant for the future ; and the reason of Comon benefit has as much ; w^{ch} for ought I see is w^{thout} exception in y^e purpose & thereon I should rest. w^{ch} is, to make what I might safely keep, w^{thout} the help of a standing fortifica^{cion}. yet remember that the eares were once made hornes, and therefore lett not y^e disb[u]rsm^{ts} be too much, but w^{ch} the publicke good preserve y^e owne interests & faculties. y^e see what power y^e haue to draw this weaknes from me : let it make y^e confident in the rest, that if further y^e conceaue any thinge necessary or expedient wherein I may asist y^e, y^e haue a full power & interest to command.

J. E.

Tower 27th Sept. 1631.

[Endorsed] 19th Sept. 1631

To Mr. Grenville.

127. SIR JOHN ELIOT TO CAPT. GODFREY:

19 Sep., 1631.

S^r.

y^r letters make me happie, & if I had my self at libertie or any thinge better to returne y^a in acknowledg-
ment of that fauour, y^a should haue it. y^r newes has been
the Comon dialect of this place, & manie still beleev it has
a truth, but by a search I finde, for all the streames it has,
that ther was but one fountaine & originall, and that not
such as does support much creditt, nor would I spare it the
opinion of my frend. ther is enough even of miracle besides
it; both for our praise and wonder; the succeses both of
Sweden and the States, shew him that is invisible; & by
those workes he has an influence over vs, of w^{ch} some signes
are pregnant. Valentine is now vpon his second pgreffe &
in Bedfordshire I thinke. the Comissions w^{ch} y^a write of
haue past like wise in the west. my Country was much
vrg'd to composition, as before, but their pouertie or igno-
rance has w^{ch}held them; I am loath to impute it to ill
nature, but what ever be the cause not one was drawn to
yeild. I pray represent my humble service to y^r good Ladie;
& to S^r William Armine when y^a see him: & tell him for
his fishing at noe mans land we heer finde by notes, that
there is an exact discription of it in the Leidger bookes at
Peeterborough. I did intimate my remembrance to y^a in
an addresse lately to M^r Hatcher. lett me by y^a doe asmuch
now to him. resting

y^r most faithfull frend

J. E.

Tower 19th Sept. 1631.

[Endorsed] 19 Sept. 1631

To M^r Godfre.

128. SIR JOHN ELIOT TO JOHN HAMPDEN:

23^d Sep., 1631.S^a

supposinge by this time y^r progresse may be ended, I presume to send these letters & y^r booke, as my ambassadors to congratulate y^r safetye & in that complement to hould correspondence wth the time. we are heer now busied about forraigne preparations & dispatches. S^r Henry Vane goes to the Emperour & the Germans. our leiftenant heer to Bruxells and the Archdutches, this latter vpon a suddaine resolucon, & more privately, pretendinge only a visit to the Q: Mother of ffrance, but concealed rather as the other to intend a negotiation for peace & restitution of the Pallatinate, the p^rsent condicon of these tymes promisinge something better then the former: of wth if they faile wee may wth some confidence conclude then they come home againe. our affection is great for the reparation of our frend^e, vpon the oportunity now giuen vs. the successe of Sweden and the States, haue a great influence & power. the enemie, pchance to divert our concurrence wth their fortunes, may be rendred more facile to our wishes, in wth if wee cann receaue satisfaccon by a treatie, wee may still re- teyne our peace, otherwise its thought by warr wee shall attempt it. we haue, Janus-like, our aspects reflectinge both waies, & in our hope of peace, the fear of warr is wth vs, wth entertaines vs privately at home, as more publickly abroad. But wth these notes I interrupt y^r quiett in the Country.

enioye it wth all happines, and amongst others your posselfions, me, though vnworthy

y^r frend & servant

J. E.

Tower 23^o Sept: 1631.

[Endorsed] 23^o Sept: 1631

To M^r Hampden.

129. SIR JOHN ELIOT TO SIR OLIVER LUKE:

26^o Sep., 1631.

S^r

I haue heerwth sent y^a what my creditt could procure in pence, wth shewes what store we haue when wee cann admitt but soe small a proportion of our silver to such vses, & that soe longe & hardly to be gotten. of the manie millions promised & brought from Spaine, ther is nothing now remayninge but the memory, all that was coyned beinge gone. only the minte does knowe ther was such treasure heer, others beleeeue, but haue noe hope to see it. as are our stores, such are our affections, fitter for peace then warr, whatever the oportunitie may present, for the restitution of our frends. to that end S^r Henry Vane this day takes his iourney into Germany to negotiate wth the Emperour & that side, for the Pallatinat, as tis thought. our master heer the Leiftenant of the Tower is likewise sent to Bruxells, and is now taking horse. his capacitie is private, & pretends only a complement to the Q[;] mother of ffrance, but wee imagine something more secrett is wthin it. his preparation has been suddaine as was the resolution

that commanded it, & his staie will not be longe, vpon w^{ch} some other expectations doe depend. many things are in consideration heer at home. amongst others S^r Randall Crewe is not vnthought of in the Cabinett to be restor'd againe Cheife iustice; others there are of the same tast & leuen, w^{ch} wee may better know in the signification that they carrie, then what they will produce. wee speake much of a remove of Bishops, that Winchester shalbe Yorke, London Winchester, & soe by degrees throughout from the good Lo: of Oxford; but wth what truth tis doubtfull. somethinge it would render in first-fruits and that may move a litle, but the matter is non answeareable to the worke: however it imports nothinge to our hopes. ther beinge noe change of natures, ffortunes and names, better but the outward conditions not the men, who though they change their places, may haue the same harts and mindes: therefore our prayers must be for a like change in this as ther owne dialect direct it, that he [Who] cann worke miracles would effect it & thus haueinge nothing else but the poore p'sent of my service, kifsinge y^r hand^e I rest

Y^r most faithfull frend

J. E.

Tower 26^o Septembr 1631.

[Eadorsed] 26-Sept. 1631

To S^r Oliver Luke.

130. SIR OLIVER LUKE TO SIR JOHN ELIOT: 3^d
Oct^r, 1631.

NOBLE AND DEARE FREEIND

This barer affordes me but tyme enoughe to presentt my thanks for your last letter and pence. for your newes, som partt I beleve not, the reste I lyke nott, yett in the whole there appeares to me somthinge lyke a preparation to a Parlyamentt, my desyre wherein you already knowe: meanes and tyme is gods to whome I leave it; I had the unhappyness to myfs my deare Benn Vallentyne though he did me the honorr to tak so harde a jorneye to gyve me a vyfsytt; for thatt favor I entreatt you to returne my thanks wth my hartye sorrowe in mysinge him. you shall receave by this barer a small portion of the fruyttes of our sommer pleasures, presenttd in a Reddeare Pye and 6 partryges: in truthe you must looke uppon the affection not the matter; The haste of this messenger enforces me thus speedyly to presentt the faythfull affections of

your freind and servantt

OL : LUKE.

Woodend

3 of ¹ October

remember my best love to matt. longe.

¹ "September," erased.

131. SIR JOHN ELIOT TO SIR OLIVER LUKE:

Oct. 3, 1631.

S^r

I haue receaued y^r kinde p'sent, w^{ch} shall attend in pte till y^r comminge to the towne, to make an acknowledgement of y^r favour. M^r Valentine was heer yesterdaie, & does expresse a great sorrow and vnhappinesse to haue mist y^r in his visit. his freind the Atturney is like to goe from him. Richardson is resolv'd to be remov'd; the other has his expectation to succeed him, & of those that are in competition for his place Banks is thought most hopefull. Winchester is Translated vnto Yorke, & London would not forme the occasion to remove him. the supplie of that sea is stop't, but when the greife is over, w^{ch} the other may have apprehended on the change, noe man doubts whose meritts shall pforme it. since my last ther comes a new intelligence out of Germanie of another victory of Swedens. in the report he hath slaine 18000 of Tillies men, vpon a sett battaile of their armies: all his carriage and ammunition likewise taken, himself hurt, & wth some difficultie escaping, & the rest haueinge noe safety but by flight. noe talke of a retreat, the overthrowe was so absolute, & the losse such as is not easilie repair'd. the truth of this wee¹ know not, but I haue searcht it by the circumstance. the advertisment I finde comminge by many waies, as to many hands directed. it has a generall

¹ "have," erased.

confluence from all parts, & if at once the whole world be not deluded, fortune & hope are mett. however the probability is great, & he that governes all things cann effect this or more, & though I am not credulous, yet I am confident, in due tyme happinesse shall not be wanting to the Church. & soe wth the representation of my service to y^r self & y^r noble ladie I rest

Y^r most faithfull frend

J. E.

Tower 3^o Octob^r 1631

[Endorsed] 3^o Octob^r 1631

To S^r Oliver Luke.

132. JOHN HAMPDEN TO SIR JOHN ELIOT:
October 3^d, 1631.

S^a

In the end of my travailes I meete y^r messengers of yo^r loue, wth bring mee a most gratefull wellcome: yo^r intentions outfly mine that thought to haue prevented yo^r, and convince mee of my disability to keepe pace with you, or the times. My imploiment of late in interrogatory wth like affaires, hath depriued mee of leisure to complement: and y^r frame of depositions is able to iustle out y^r style of a letter. you were farre enough aboue my emulation before; but breathing now y^r same ayre wth an Ambassador, you are out of all ayme. I beleue well of his negotiation frō y^r large testimony you haue giuen of his parts & I beleue y^r king of Swedens sword will be y^r best of his Topicks to perswade a peace. t'is a powerfull one now if I heare

II.

D D

aright: fame giuing Tilly a late defeate in Saxony wth 20,000 losse; the truth whereof will facilitate o^r worke. The Spaniards curtesy being knowne to be no lesse then willingly to render that which he cannot hold. The notion of these effects interrupts not o^r quiett, though y^e reasons by w^{ch} they are gouerned do transcend our pitch; yo^r apprehensions y^e ascend a region aboue those clouds w^{ch} shadow vs, are fitt to pierce such heights; and oⁿ to receaue such notions as descend from thence: wth while you are pleased to impart you make y^e demonstrations of yo^r fauour to become y^e rich possesions of

Yo^r euer faithfull friend
and servant

JO: HAMPDEN.

Present my seruice to M^r Long.

God I thanke hime hath made mee father of another sonne.

Hampden, Octob^r 3^d

133. SIR JOHN ELIOT TO KNIGHTLEY:

15th October, 1631.

S^a

Y^r letters make me happie as well in the testimonie of y^r love, as in the oportunity w^{ch} they giue me to returne the like to y^a. I was now studieing where to finde one when y^r melfsenger accosted me, & this being soe vnexpectedlie presented I could not but presentlie addrefse my selfe to writeinge, though I haue nothinge to giue y^a but

that vnusefull thinge, my service. our affaires that are prisoners, stand in Condicon as they were. Mr. Selden is continued vpon baile till the next terme againe; soe as the discharge w^{ch} was expected is now chang'd, & he divides betweene imprisonment & liberty, w^{ch} I belecue likewise wilbe the fortune of Will: Strode. & soe wth my best loue I rest

Y^r most faithfull frind

J. E.

Tower 15^o Octob^r 1631

[Endorsed] 15^o Octob^r 1631

To M^r Knightlie.

134. SIR JOHN ELIOT TO CAPT. GODFREY:
8^o Nov., 1631.

S^a

at the same tyme when I receaued the fauour of y^r letters, I had the like from S^r Edward Aycoghe, & wantinge a reconveyance vnto him, I must returne this thanks for both. when y^a see him I praye giue him his part, & to y^r selfe accept a poore acknowledgment, w^{ch} is all my weaknesse cann exhibit for the satisfaction of that great debt I owe y^a. Valentine after his long trauailes did betake himself to rest, soe as in a moneth or more, beinge at his lodging neer the gatehowse, noe frinde might see him but whom his greatnesse would admitt. sicknesse was p^rtended but there were that thought it Counterfeit & affected, & yet ther be that hould his dissimulation worthie punishment. reallie I belecue him (his iuglinge set aside)

in the same state he was, both in bodie, & in businesse ;
 for though the change of the Atturney may haue chang'd
 somethinge in his favours, his ffortune is not alter'd, but the
 expectations are the same, & as the virtue, such may be
 the man. this is all I cann tell y^a of him, vnlesse by suppo-
 sition I should iudg him, in his reservations & ¹ retirement,
 knockinge at some backe dore o'th Court, at w^{ch} if he
 enter to preferment y^a shall know it from

Y^r faithfull frind & servant

J. E.

represent my service to y^r Ladie.

Tower 8^o Novembr 1631

[Endorsed] 8^o Novembr. 1631

To M^r Godfry.

135. SIR BEVILL GRENVILLE TO SIR JOHN ELIOT:

9^a Nov. 1631.

S^a

I am infinitely bound unto you, for many noble
 favours, & not least for y^r last, wherein you have dealt so
 ingenuously with me, concerning my late undertaking at
 Lundey. w^{ch} I confesse hath open'd mine eyes, & given
 settlement to my resolutions. & I hope, I shall walke with
 y^r caution in this affaire, as you shall not have cause to
 repent y^r advice. wherein I will say no more, till I may
 have the happinefse to see you. I thinke I never gave

¹ "determent," erased.

you any accompt of the service you commanded me at Lancheston, since I receav'd that life : but I presume y^r servant hath given you notice of what pass'd, & of my readinesse to serve you, which I shall ever retaine. My neighbours I sent all foorth, w^{ch} did not deceave y^r trust, nor faile my expectation, & if I had been, (or may be heer-after) of counsell with y^r agents, in the first nomination of y^r Jurers, I should have found enough in mine owne quarter, to have made up y^r number, of such as for their honesties, could not have been excepted at, & for my sake, would not have been terrified or beaten from a good cause. & now S^r, I shall conclude, with the lamenting of my unfortunatenesse in many things, but lately, (to omit others,) in the mortallity of my horses, which have diverse of them runne madd, & beaten themselves to death, no prevention being able to remedy it. amongst w^{ch} y^r faire Mare made one, whose losse more grieves me then all the rest. but she hath left behinde her, a brace of lovely Stone-Colts, w^{ch} I hope will live to do you service. & thus S^r, for want of better businesse, I make bolde to trouble you, with such poore relations. my poverty can but wish, it could do you service, & that it doth unfeignedly. but instead of power, you shall be ever sure of the praiers, of

Y^r faithfull frend & servant

BEVILL GRENVILE.

Stow. 9th 4^o 1631

136. SIR JOHN ELIOT TO KNIGHTLEY :

25^o Nov., 1631.S^r

the newes y^r hear pases every where, & makes the expectacōn amongst men to answear their desire. It is much discourst of all sides, & the Courtiers entertaine it, but if my opinion, as y^r require it, shall direct y^r, I would not haue y^r credulous of report, much more being oft divulg'd in art, then reallie & in truth. It is not wthout some scandall & disadvantage to good men, that their enemies haue observed them subiect to credulitie. it is sufficient to reason & discreation to beleue in generall, that there is a procurator of their good ; but in these pticulars amongst men, he that is least affected, is most wise, fframe being neither a good servant nor a master. when there shall be any thinge worthie of y^r knowledg y^r shall hear it. In the meane tyme possesse y^r hopes in patience, & haue me in y^r asurance, as most faithfullie ingag'd.

Y^r frend & servant

J. E.

Tower 25^o Novembr 1631[Endorsed] 25^o Novembr 1631To M^r Knightly.

137. SIR JOHN ELIOT TO MRS. CORBET :

5^o Dec., 1631.SWEET M^{rs} CORBETT

y^r haue p'vented me in all & by y^r kinde letters & remembrances, doublinge y^r favours, haue soe increast the

obligacōn of my debt, as that acknowledgm^t I meant y^a is now lost, as improper for this tyme ; wth requires a larger reckoning, besides the accompt of my former slowness & silence ; for this ther is a double reason to excuse me, wth I doubt not¹ you'll allowe of, the one in that I haue mist y^r sonne this Terme whom I long'd to speake wth, to whom I haue a suite ; the other is in that great losse of Capt : Waller who was my convoy to all parts & wth, whom I lost the generall entercourse wth my frends, haueing not since his death heard from my sonne in ffraunce ; this I hope shall gaine y^r p^don for what's past : for the p^sent recognition of y^r favours I^a will not presume to make an enumeration of my thankes, when noe words cann satisfie the meritt of y^r Charity, that selectes soe meane an obiect to expresse soe great a virtue ; it is noe small degree of libertie in my bonds to be honor'd by y^r memory, & amongst the many blessings from aboue which haue compasst me on all sides this I receaue as one. all that does checke my happines therein, is, that I deserve it not, but in affection I am

y^r most faithfull ser^t
J. E.

Tower 5th Decembr. 1631.

[Endorsed] 5th Decembris 1631

To M^{rs} Corbett.

¹ "y^a will," erased.

² "would," erased.

138. SIR JOHN ELIOT TO SIR OLIVER LUKE:

Dec. 20^o, 1631.S^r

I knowe not well how to answeare y^r intelligence, being scarce certaine of the knowledg of my selfe. the reports heer outrunn y^r fame i^th Countrie, & make me every day abroad; sometymes at Court sometymes at places neer it, alwaies wth great ones & in the eye of fortune, soe as wth those y^t visit me I hardlie am Credited to the Contrarye, & though they finde, yett scarce beleue me in the Tower. tis not yett three daies since y^t he that is governor of this place of purpose came to tell me that the Cort was soe confident therein, as his reputation was to weake to giue satisfaccōn in the case. divers entercourses are supposd, discourses fitted to them. & that soe generally receaued, as I haue some doubt my selfe; ther is an altersia. what originall this has I know not, nor what end. some pretend a great dislike & anger at the thinge. reallie I haue it as a good cause of mirth, sheweing the levity of the multitude, soe to be moved by some error or mistake; or if ther be an art that gives it life & motion. to me it is the more ridiculous for that. its true that the speech of this rumor in the Court, was made an occasion, in the relation vnto me of some other pointes of Conference, that directed to an end, but I declined any serious considerations there vpon, alledging that it was not logicall to draw a conclusion from false premises, and soe stand what ever fame has made me, a prisoner as before. arme y^r selfe a while wth

doubt & incredulitie. manie things y^a must heer before y^a come to truth. She yett lies in an abstruse vault & corner, of w^{ch}, the first light I gett, y^a may be sure to haue it & what other service may be done y^a by

J. El.

Tower London xx^o Decembr. 1631

[Endorsed] Decembr xx^o 1631

To S^r Oliver Luke.

139. SIR WILLIAM ARMYNE TO SIR JOHN ELIOT :

20^o Dec., 1631.

WORTHY S^a.

Give me leave to interrupt y^r higher contemplations wth y^e rememb^r : of my service to you, & y^e well wishes of some of y^r good frendes my neighbours ; let not y^e tallest Towre disdaigne y^e lowest country cottage, for they may be vsefull & helpefull to eache other.

This present hathe noe other errande but to returne me y^e asurance of y^r healthe ; for other matters, I know you soe well, y^t you confine y^r contentment wthin y^r owne limitts, soe as nothinge can deprive you of Happynesse ; & y^t sylly man w^{ch} dothe otherwayes, is but a tenant at will (y^e basest kinde of Tenors) & depend^e wholly vpon a nother mans pleasure, inioyinge nothinge he can call his owne, noe, not soe muche as himselfe, y^e worst of thinges.

Bee a citizen of y^e world, & imprisone not y^r notions, but what God & nature hathe dictatede vnto you for good & Truthe co^municate to all, for noe mane lights a candle - to putt it vnder a bushell.

II.

EE

Pardone this freedome, 'tis my affection. yf I err blame y', & I shall love you more. And soe I leave you wheare I fownd you, courtinge y' mistris, highe contemplatione, yet Reth: what was once sayd of y^e Nightingale, Vox est, præterea nihil, prese harde one to Action, & then you make her beautifull, & putt her into y^e comelyest dresse. soe thinkes he yt is her servant in part, &

yours wholly

W. ARMYNE.

20 Decembr. 1631.

[Addressed] To the worthy & his muche honorede frende
S^r Jo. Eliot, K^t present these.

[Endorsed] 20^o Decembr. 1631

S^r W^m Armyne.

140. SIR JOHN ELIOT TO SIR WILLIAM ARMYNE:

21^o Dec., 1631.

S^r

what height & ambition may be oweinge to lowenesse & humilitie, y^e example may expresse, who from the topp of worth & fortune can looke downe on the meritlese & mean condiçon of a prisoner. but it is Charitie not debt, that inferrs the obligaçon on the greater, & soe it is in y^e an actt of y^e owne virtue, of w^{ch} y^e haue made in me a Character, & impressiõ, whose admiration I must render for the retribution of my service. y^e know how vselesse are the indeavours of a Captive & in me know how much, in that, ther is lesse pmise then in others. noe man is the author of his owne abilities or power; the intencion, & im-

ployment of those faculties w^{ch} are given vs, if that, is all we cann call o^r owne ; as the successe soe the originall of all virtue is wthout vs. nature & heauen must answer for what we inheritt not in that, and affection must be taken as a satisfac^ōn for the fact. my talent is soe litle as it equalls not the least number in Arithmaticke ; and what y^a call a light is but in truth a darknesse ; to hide or shadow that, is but to make nothing out of nothing, & that cann speak me neither ill accomptant or Philosopher. desire I haue to doe service unto all men ; wholie I am devoted to the honor of my friends, y^a as the cheife I haue still in admiration, the effect of w^{ch} were there occasion giuen me, should haue a demonstration more then words. this I hope shall excuse me for the p^sent, if I be like y^r Nightingall, or lesse. shall I be more at any tyme it is y^rs who have a full comānd & interest in him that is still

y^r servant

J. E.

Tower 21^o Decembr. 1631:

[Endorsed] 21^o Decembr. 1631

To S^r W^m Armyne.

141. SIR JOHN ELIOT TO JOHN HAMPDEN :

26^o Dec., 1631.

S^r The King personally aggravates the imprisonment.

that I write not to y^a anie thinge of intelligence wilbe excused, when I doe lett y^a know that I am vnder a new restraints by warrant from the King, for a suppos'd

abuse of libertie in admitting a free resort of visitants, & vnder that Coulor houlding consultations, wth my frends, (my lodgings are remov'd, & I am now wher Candlelight may be suffer'd but scarce fire.) I hope y^ele thinke that this exchange of places makes not a change of minde. the same pteūcon is still wth me, & the same confidence, & these things cann^t haue end by him that giues them being. none but my servants, hardlie my sonne, may haue admittance to me, my frends I must desire for their owne sakes to forbear Comīng to the Tower: y^e amongst them are cheife, & haue the first place in this intelligence; I haue now leasure & shall dispose my selfe to businesse, therefore those loose papers, w^{ch} y^e had I would cast out of the way, being now return'd againe vnto me. in y^r next giue me a word or two of note, for those translations y^e excepted at. y^e knowe wee are blinde towards o^r selves, o^r frends must be o^r glāses. therefore in this I crave (what in all things I desire) the reflection of y^r iudgment & rest
y^r frind & servant

J. E.

Tower 16 December 1631

[Endorsed] 16^o Decemb^r 1631To M^r Hampden.

142. SIR JOHN ELIOT TO SIR OLIVER LUKE:

28^o Dec^r, 1631.S^r

our late changes haue a while defer'd the iorney
of these meſsengers who will relate them and the cause.

that I write not of particulars, I presume y^e will excuse it who know the danger of the tyme. In me I thanke god it makes noe alteration, & I hope y^e doubt it not. my resolutions are the same, & my affections still devoted to the service of my friends, w^{ch} my prayers shall testifie to the heauens, till they may have opportunity amongst men. represent my humble service to y^r Ladie. pardon this hast & shortnes, in him y^e for the present has no thing to returne for y^r favours, but his thanks, & that vselesse thing the promise of himselfe

y^r most affectionat servant

J. E.

Tower 28^o Decembr 1631

[Endorsed] 28^o Decembr 1631

To S^r Oliver Luke.

143. SIR JOHN ELIOT TO KNIGHTLEY :

3^d Jan., 1631/2.

DEERE BROTHER

I write nowe to yo^e that yo^e maie not hereafter wonder that I write not. the occasion of it is a newe restraunte vpon me, all companie beinge debarr'd & my lodging channg'd. the reason of this p'tended is a supposition of consultations, vnder the cloake of visitt^e, but as I knowe noe cause of iealosie in that soe by the chaunge I find noe alteration in my selfe. the place I am in has the same power vpon it w^{ch} did p'tect mee elsewhere, and I am still confident will assist mee. it is that station hee has geuen mee whoe can p'pare another, and not to keepe this

constantlie were to doe lesse then souldiers doe for generall^s, w^{ch} were vnworthie of his service that is more able & munificent: for this I must desire yo^a to excuse my silence for a while if yo^a yet please to comaund the retribution of my debt, let mee receave the leaste intimation of yo^r pleasure, and it shalbe readie for yo^a, wherein yo^r favo^r being acknowledged as in the manie other demonstrations of yo^r love, w^{ch} I desire yo^r praiers maie still contynewe, I rest
y^r most faithfull frind & broth^r

J. E.

from my new lodging in the tower
3^o Jan. 1631.

[Endorsed] 3^o Jan. 1631

To M^r Knightlie

144. SIR OLIVER LUKE TO SIR JOHN ELIOT: n. d.

Noble and deare frende, the enjoyinge of this messengerr (beinge on[e] of yours) hathe gyven noe lytell contentmentt to this place. however the newes he brought of your unexpected change myght much have coold it if the assurance I have of Chrystian resolution to submytt to god in all did not gyve me full satisfaction. he only is able to supportt in all tryalls, requyringe nothinge butt a holy submision, for w^{ch} he will in his good tyme gyve a glorious and comfortable yssue and in the meene [time] all needfull supplies, so thoughe thereto in these there be a takeinge away the Conversation of men, it is to glad his chyl dren butt a passage to a more neere communion w^t him in Chryste: and then consyder what losses naye what are afterwards gaynes,

whereof I assure my self you will throughe his infinitt
mercy receave a larger portion, for w^{ch} as all other comforts
I shall hartly praye: all I can think of is to desyre your
care of your healthe, w^{ch} is the sole danger I apprehend in
this, assuringe my self all els wilbe returned w^t advantage.
if by the tyme of my cominge to London the waye be
oppened you doubt not of my vysytinge you. however you
are assured of the good wyshes and prayers of

your lovinge and faythfull frend

OL. LUKE.

145. RICHARD JAMES, B.D., TO SIR JOHN ELIOT:
15^o January, 1631/2: of "The Monarchie
of Man."

S^r Jhon Elyott. your treatise is a verie good copie of
your self, and such as I wish printed for the vse of our
Countrie. peradventure it would raise them to somme ap-
prehension of equanimitie magnanimitie and justice, with-
oute which there can be no happinesse in this life, nor assu-
rance of y^e other. If you shall be of minde to lett it comme
forth silently, the intimation of y^e Author twice given, may
be easily alterd, and my few not momentarie criticismes
on y^e reading, desire to comme vnto you if they may by
word, or otherwise, by what hand you please. So all heere
blesing and saluting your noble courage, I rest

your faithfull servant

RICH: JAMES.

15^o Januarie.

Monarchie to much extolled.

The disquisition on Tacitus definition impertinent, it being but y^e flatterie of Tyrants. 21.

David and Salomon not to be stiled y^e best or wisest of princes, Jewish exemples to be warily produced. fol. 25.

Augustus not to be commended. he was a villaine so lived so died guided by the gourmand A^{nas}(?) and would not heere Agrippa. 25.

Tibi soli peccavera. pag. 36. because he had committed a politick murder in which he stood cleere to men.

Religion as it is vsually taken for y^e profession of these or these articles, is no anchor of state.

The secrett of government arcanii imperij not to be named. 'tis a word of tyrannie. in faire governments all is cleere and open. 74.

Solomon pag. 75 that was y^e wisest of all mortalls. no. that amongst the Jews is so reputed.

The discourse concerning the philosophers, not much pertinent to the treatise, they being for the most parte to their private ends politick impostors and so fam'd by plato. Otherwise truth in so much as concerns a politick bodie is ever open and cleere. pag. 77.

Fortunat vnfortunat peece of meritt. pag. 15 aliter diceñt.

[Addressed] To my Noble friend S^r Jhon

Elyott giue theise.

[Endorsed] 25th Januar 1631

M^r. James.

. The references are to the MS. now in British Museum, and as reproduced by me. Cf. Forster, ii., 660-1.—G.

146. SIR JOHN ELIOT TO SIR OLIVER LUKE:

24^o January, 1631/2.S^a

my manie troubles of removing have a while hindered mee from writing to yo^a, the lodging wth I had vpon my first remove before xxas being againe altered, soe as I maie saie of my lodging in the tower as Jacob for his wages, nowe theis ten times have they chann'g'd it, but I thank god not once has it caus'd an alteration of my mind; soe infinit is that mercie wth has hetherto p^rected me, and I doubt not but I shall find it wth mee, the greatest violence of this storme is like to fall on Valentine, hee being retrencht of that libertie hee had, wth maie be some p^rudice to his busines. it threatens likewies some dropps on M^r Selden, and has stopt the discharg was look't for. hee was yesterdaie being his daie of apparance in the Co^rt but the Judges would not quitt him, and therefore contynewed him againe on baile for a while longer that they might further advise therein. M^r Long by writt was remov'd from hence on Sundaie nighte to the Counter, and from thence carried next daie to the Chequer barr; where it was suppos'd that his custodie wth the Sheriff made him wthin the cognizance of the Co^rt. Vpon wth some fewe dayes being geven him to answeare to the information, hee was return'd againe to the Counter, and if hee aunsweare not wthin the time they geve out, the bill wilbe taken p^r confesso. Wee imagine his p^rson shalbe retornd hether againe when his worke is done, but what desire hee has I

II.

F F.

knowe not. the incouragement for his guardian being not more than anye gaile may yeld him. when yo^r have wearied yo^r good thought^e wth those light papers that I sent yo^r, I praie retorne them wth the correc^{ti}on of yo^r iudgement. I maie one daie send yo^r others of more worth if it please god to contynewe mee this leisure & my health. but the best can be but broken and in patches from him that dares not hazard to retrieve them. such thinges from mee falling [like] the leaves in Autumne soe varioulie & vncertainlie that they hardlie meete againe, but wth yo^r I am confident what ever my weakenes shall p^resent will have a faire acceptance. yo^r charitie is my assurance in this point of w^{ch} being most desirous as of yo^r praier I rest

Yo^r most affectionate servante

J. E.

Tower 25th Jan. 1631

[Endorsed] 24th Januar 1631

To S^r Oliver luke

147. SIR BEVILL GRENVILLE TO SIR JOHN ELIOT:

Jany 30th, 1631/2.

S^a

I am now wary by whom I write, because I have heard, that a litle more straitnesse, & restraint was lately layed on you; & therfore chose this worthy bearer, my especiall good frend, & neighbour of Barnstable, M^r Newton. one that is an officer in the Admiralty, but one of the most Gentile, & honest Gentleman, y^t ever I knew live in that Towne. & had not my assurance of the man, been

such as it is, I would have forborne to trouble you with my lrs: S^r I receav'd y^r by M^r Periman, & that you may ever see, you cañott speake to me without effect, I graunted y^r desires, & all his for y^r sake, at full. though there were not a thing in the world, that you could have more tryed my love in. for the man had in his former Sherifffwick, express'd such a particular malice unto me, as I did suffer in the vlew of neer 500^l by it. the perticulars are too tedious to relate, but what I say is true. I had therfore to requite him, taken such course with my cosen Prideaux, as he gave me his faith, that Periman should never be his officer, & when Periman came unto him, he gave him the repulse, unlesse he could gett me to release him of his promise. all w^{ch} upon the receipt of y^r lre, I did, & to second it, made a journey purposely to my kinsman, to further his suit. which unlesse I had done, I dare say, he had failed. & yett I lett him knowe, it was not for his owne sake. he was desirous to give me any security, y^t I should receive no prejudice by him this yeare, being (as I must confesse,) not yet altogether out of their danger. I answer'd him, that I scorned to take any assurance from him, but I had y^r word, & theron would relye, & if that were not sufficient safety for me, lett me suffer. & I would much more willingly doe it, then be beholden to him. This was that passage. since that time, there have been rumors, very rife in these parts, of a Parliament. if it be so, I wish you would lett me have some timely notice, that I might doe you service, w^{ch} I more desire, then any earthly thing besides, & I presume I have some interest in

the affections of the people. but though you thinke me not worth the sending to, yet I have taken such course, as you shall be sure of the first Knights place whensoever it happen. but I assure you, you shall not have y^r olde partner whosoever be the other. I cease to trouble you farther, but with my service to you, & praiers for you, I rest

Yⁿ unfeignedly to serve you

BEVILL GRENVILE.

Bydeford

Jan. 30. 1631.

148. SIR JOHN ELIOT TO SIR BEVILL GRENVILE :

17^o Feb., 1631/2.

S^r

the restraint and watch vppon me barrs much of my entercourse wth my frends, wholie their presence is denied me, & letters are soe dangerous & suspected, as it is litle that way we exchange, soe as, if cercumstance shall condemne me I must stand guiltie in their iudgm^t. yett yo^r, though wth some difficultie, I have receaved, and manie times when it was knockinge at my dores, because their convoy could not enter, they did retire againe, wherein I must commend the caution of y^r messenger, but at length it found a safe passage, by my servants, made me happie in y^r favour, for wth this comes as a retribution and acknowledgment. y^r Concesion to John Periman adds much to the reckoning of my debt, though the obligation be the same. y^r interest in me formerlie was such as it had noe limitt, but my all, & I cannot give y^a more, wth if I could

this reason does deserve it, that y^a haue lett downe soe much of y^r selfe for him that is soe vnworthy, who must confesse the greatnes of that Courtesie, and I doe hope the other will strive to meritt it. ffor those rumors w^{ch} y^a meet, that are but artificiall, or by chance, it must be y^r wisdom not to creditt them. manie such false fiers are flyinge dailie in the ear. when ther shalbe occasion expect that intelligence from frend^e, for w^{ch} in the meane tyme, y^a doe well to be provided, though I shall crave, when that dispute falls properlie, & for reasons not deniable, a change of y^r intention in perticuler as it concernes my selfe. in the rest I shall concurr wth all readines to serve y^a and in all y^a shall Command me, who am nothinge but is y^r. represent my humble service to y^r Ladie, & tell her that yett I doubt not one daie to kisse her hand^e. make much of my Godsonne. men may become pretious in his time, to whom, wth all y^r sweet others, and y^r selfe, I wish all happines & felicitie, & rest

Y^r most faithfull frind & brother

Tower 17^o febr. 1631.

[Endorsed] 17^o febr. 1631

To M^r. Grenville.

149. SIR JOHN ELIOT TO SIR WILLIAM COURTNEY :
20^o Feb., 1631/2.

S^a

I have directed this bearer to y^a wth a speciall suite w^{ch} I hope y^a will not deny me. I desire much to knowe the perticulers of y^r employments at Hull in the raysinge of

the men w^{ch} were intended in exchange for some old soldiers in the Low countries, and of your passage wth them and successe before the late Calles action. I praie therein favour me to lett me have the coppies of y^r Commissions, instructions, iornalls, and other papers of that busines, w^{ch} my servant will soone dispatch, and it shalbe an obligation on me, if I may at any time be worthy to serve y^a wth the vtmost powers of

J. E.

Tower 20th febr: 1631

S^r Will: Courtney.

[Endorsed] 25 febr: 1631

To S^r William Courtney.

150. SIR JOHN ELIOT TO JOHN SELDEN.

Feb^r. 21^o, 1631.

S^a.

Since my last wth y^a I have beene much importund by letters from some others, to give more libertie to that Treatise wth y^a redd. to satisfie their first desire, in the veiw therof, I recald it soe hastilie from y^a: but in the next I dare not be soe yeelding, wthout some better iudgment then myne owne; & therfore once againe have sent it to y^a, qualified in some parts, wher y^a thought it tender & too quicke; desiring y^a to peruse it, if y^r times have so much leasure, & to returne me y^r censure thervpon, by wth

I shall direct myself, taking it for an exprefion of y^r love,
that makes me

Y^r most faithfull servant

J. E.

ffebr. 21. 1631

[Endorsed] 21^o ffibr. 1631.

To M^r Selden.

151. SIR JOHN ELIOT TO SIR EDWARD AYSCOUGH :

21st Feb^y., 1631.

S^a

Y^r care has made me whole, and the influence of
that favour w^{ch} y^r memory has exprest, warmes me soe
fullie as noe cold can be perceavd. the prescriptions w^{ch} y^a
sent me I will laie vp in store as a trefure for necefsitie, and
if other trades doe faile, by that I'll turne Phisitian. I
pray represent my humble thankes & service to those good
Doctors that assist y^a, lett y^r true hart exprefse me to those
Honest Soⁿs of Lincolneshire, and all o^r frends; I am
not worthy a remembrance to y^r Ladie, but in my admira-
tion of her vertues, kissinge her faire hands, I rest

Y^r affectionate servant

J: El:

Tower 21^o ffibr. 1631.

[Endorsed] 21^o ffibr. 1631

To S^r Edward Ayscough.

152. SIR JOHN ELIOT TO RICHARD KNIGHTLEY :

15^o March, 1631/2.

S^a

Y^a must excuse me that I kept not promise sooner to send y^a those papers y^a desir'd, w^{ch} I deferd a while for a faire copie to be written, but therein was prevented by S^r Oliver Luke, who has ingroos that to himselfe, & the originall, w^{ch} is all that I posseſſe, I did doubt was hardlie legible; yett rather then faile in all, I haue presum'd here wth to adventure it, w^{ch} when y^a are wearie of the trouble, I shall praie y^a to returne againe. copies I desire may not be taken from it, because transcriptions doe adulterat, and a litle change and difference, besides the iniurie to the thinge, may draw on other preiudice. if y^a thinke it worthe of more veiwe, haueing pvs'd it once, I will as soone as it returnes, gett it new written heer, wher I maie examine it my selfe, & send a copie to y^a; thus farr by the waie lett me prepare y^a to consider it, that it was not made a businesse, but an exercise in those minutes when that Embrio was brought forth. ther were other things more serious then in act, w^{ch} one daie may be communicable wth our frends; and when that is, your knowledge will be first. But for the present I am wholie at a stand, and haue been soe this fortnight & more, by a sicknesse w^{ch} it has pleased my master to impose: in whose hands remayne the issues of life and death. it comes originallie from my cold, w^{ch} wth the Cough haueinge been longe vppon me, causes such ill effects to followe it, that the symptomes are more dangerous then

the greife. it has weakened much both the appetite and concoction, and the outward strength by that. some doubt there is of a Consumption, but we indeavour to prevent it by application of the meanes, and, as the great Phisitian seeke the blefsinge from the Lord. he onlie knowes the state of soule & bodie, & in his wisdom orders all things for his Children as it is best for both. our dutie is submission to the Crofse, w^{ch} he laies¹ on vs, whoe in his mercy likewise will giue² vs strength to bear it: of w^{ch} I have had soe manie trialls formerlie in the infinit pticulers of his favour vnto me; as I cannot doubt it now, however vnworthie of my selfe, but in the meritts of my Saviour rest confident in that hope w^{ch} he himselfe has given me, and will fortifie. the asistance of y^r prayers I know cannot be wantinge to y^r frend. pardon me the trouble of this letter. and assoone as conveniently y^a maie, let me hear how these things come to y^r hands, w^{ch} wth the remembrance of my service, I now send y^a. restinge

Y^r most affectionat brother

J: El:

Tower 15^o Marcij 1631

[Endorsed] 15^o Marcij, 1631

To M^r Knightly.

¹ "vppon," erased.

² "me," erased.

153. SIR JOHN ELIOT TO SIR OLIVER LUKE:

21^o March, 1631.S^r

I cannot yett performe my promise to y^r for the retvrninge of the booke, it beinge not copied, w^{ch} I desire, but that done y^r shall receaue it. In the meane time I haue heerwth sent, to entertaine y^r, another of lesse trouble to be read, & this likewise is all of it I haue, for w^{ch} I must praie y^r when y^r are weary of it to render it me againe. I thanke god I finde my health amendinge, and litle doth hinder it at this time but my hoarsnes and some remainder of my cough. those I hope, time & the season will remove, though they have been longe vpon me, w^{ch} I must leave to him, that is the best Phisitian, to whom likewise I commend the care of y^r & y^r. & rest

Y^r faithfull servant

J. E.

Tower xxj^o Marcij 1631.[Endorsed] 21^o Marcij 1631To S^r Oliver luke.

154. SIR JOHN ELIOT TO RICHARD KNIGHTLEY:

22^d March, 1631/2.S^r

I am glad to haue intelligence by y^r letters that my papers are come safelie, to y^r hand^e, because the melsenger, my boy that went wth them to the carrier, never sawe me

since, & I now write the more willinglie to know whether y^a ther finde him wrapt in any of the leaves, or hidd in some corner of a blott. there are enough to cover him and more, in w^{ch} if y^r pervsall shall discouer him, lett me haue word in time. Y^r Phisicke godwilling I will vse, wth that w^{ch} is the best of all others to assist it, & w^{thout} w^{ch} all Phisicke is in vaine. the successe thereof y^a shall heer after hear. if I may be vsefull to any thinge, God can preserve me for it, if otherwise that my labours be at an end, he that disposes of that will make me readie for himselfe, whom we doe serve in all things & to whom an infinite debt is owinge by all men, but aboue all by me

Y^r frend & brother

J. E.

Tower 22^o Marcij 1631.

[Endorsed] March 22th 1631

To M^r Knightlie.

155. SIR JOHN ELIOT TO JOHN HAMPDEN:

22^d March, 1631.

DEER FRIND

what y^a may command y^a need not to sue for. me y^a have certaynly as y^r owne, & whither to be imploid in censure or absolution, convertible to y^r will. but mercie is more covenable then iudgment wth a prisoner, whose condition being obnoxious to disfavor cannot love it. but in y^a ther is noe occasion for that doubt, all being curtesie

wth comes from y^a, & wher ther is noe debt due ther is no iniurie. I know y^r many entertaynments & small leasure, & myself vnworthie to interrupt the least perticular of y^r thoughts. it satisfies me to have the asurance of y^r frindship, & when it was allowable, that I had the fruition of y^r self. but a little to expostulat wth y^r memorie, I conceave in all things y^a are not iust, though, but y^r owne word, noe obligation be vpon y^a. I had an expectation of certayne papers y^a would send me, & y^r promise did invite it, wth yet I hear not of. quit y^a in this as speedilie as y^a can, for wthout it y^a are faultie. I thanke god lately my busines has beene much wth Doctors & phisitians, soe that but by them, I have had little trouble wth my self. these three weekes I have had a full leasure to doe nothing & strictly tied vnto it, either by their direction or my weaknes. the cause originally was a could, but the symptomes that did follow it, spake more sicknes. a generall indisposition it begot in all the faculties of the bodie. the learned said a consumption did attend it, but I thanke god I did not feele or credit it. what they advise, as the ordinance hath appointed, I was content to vse, & in the true sence of patient, suffer'd whatever they imposd. great is the authoritie of princes, but greater much is theirs, who both command our persons & our wills. What the succes of their government wilbe, must be referd to him, that is master of their power. I finde my self better'd, though not well, wth makes me the more readie to observe them. the divine blessing must effectuat the rest, wth authors all the happines we receave. it is that mercie that has hitherto protected

me, &, if I may seeme vsefull in his wisdom, will continue me, amongst other offices, to remayne
y^r faithfull frind & serv^t

J. E.

Tower 22^o Marcij

[Endorsed] 22^o Marcij 1631.

To M^r. Hampden.

156. SIR JOHN ELIOT TO JOHN HAMPDEN:

29th March, 1632.

He died 27^o November, 1632. In the interval between this letter and 'the end,' it seems an inevitable conclusion that there was an absolute prohibition and suspension of correspondence. See Forster, ii. 721.

S^r

besides the acknowledgm^t of your favour that haue soe much¹ compassion on y^r frend, I haue litle to returne y^e from him that has nothinge worthy y^r acceptance, but the contestation that I have between an ill bodie and the aer, that quarrell, and are frinds as the sunne or winde affect them. I haue these three daies been abroad and as often brought in new impresions of the cold, yett both in strength and appetite, I finde my selfe betterd by the motion. could at first was the occasion of my sicknes: heat & tenderneise by close keepinge in my chamber has since increast my weaknesse. aer and exercise are thought most proper to repaire it, w^{ch} are the prescription of my

¹ "favour wth," erased.

doctors, though noe Phisicke. I thanke god other medicines I now take not, but these Catholicons, & doe hope I shall not need them. as Children learne to goe, I shall get acquainted wth the aer. practise. & vse will compasse it, & now and then a fall is an ² instruction for the future. these varieties he does trie vs wth that will haue vs perfect at all parts, & as he giues the triall, he likewise giues the issue. the abilitie that shalbe necessary for the worke he will supplie, that does Command the labour, who deliveringe from the Lion & the Bear, has the Philistine also at the disposition of his will, and those that trust him vnder his protection & defence. O the infinite mercy of our master! deer frend, how it abounds to vs, that are vnworthy of his service! how broken! how imperfect! how perverse & crooked are our waies in obedience to him! how exactly straight the line of his providence vnto vs, drawn out through all occurrents & pticulers to the whole length & measure of o^r time! how pfect is his loue, that has given his sonne vnto vs, and wth him has promised likewise to giue³ vs althings! those that relieve vs but in part, we honor & esteem. those that preserve and save vs from any danger or extremity, we haue in veneration and admire, naie even for those that morallie are good, from whom there comessome outward benefitt & advantage, its said some men dare dye. how⁴ should we then honor & admire soe good a god & Saviour by whom we are, by whom we have al-

² "interruption," erased.

³ "him," erased.

⁴ "then," erased.

things we posseſſe, who does releive our want^r, ſatisfie our neceſſities, prevent our dangers, free vs from all extremities, naie to preſerve & ſave, that died himſelfe for vs! what cann we render? what retribution can we make, worthy ſoe great a maiestie, worthy ſuch loue and favour? we haue nothinge but our ſelves, who are vnworthy aboue all; and yett that as ^a all other things is his, ſoe as to offer vp that is but to giue him of his owne; & that in farr worſe condition, then wee at firſt receau'd it, w^{ch} yett, (ſoe infinite is his goodneſſe, for the merits of his ſonne) he is contented to accept. this deer freind, muſt be the comfort of his Children, this is the Phisicke we muſt vſe in all our ſickneſſe and extremities, this is the ſtrengthing of the weake, the enrichinge of the poore, the libertie of the captiue, the health of the diſeaſed, the life of thoſe that die, the death of that wretched life of ſinne; and this happines haue his ſaints. the contemplation of this happines has ledd me almoſt beyond the compaſſe of a letter; but the haſt I vſe vnto my frend & the affection that does move it, will I hope excuſe me. friends ſhould communicate their ioyes: this as the greateſt therefore I could not but impart vnto my frend, being therein moved by the preſent ſpeculation of y^r letters, w^{ch} alwaies haue the grace of ſuch intelligence, and are a happines to him that is truelie

yⁿ

J. E.

Tower 29^o Marcij 1632.[Endorſed] 29^o Marcij 1632To M^r. Hampden.^a "are," erased.

So the final letter of the Letter-Book has now been given. It is worthily closed with one from such a man as ELIOT to such a man as JOHN HAMPDEN. Forster finely and with unwonted emotion writes:—"Hampden's reply unhappily is lost. But the affectionate solicitude awakened in him by what his friend had written, and his anxiety at once to hear again, are reflected in every line that Eliot wrote back after an interval of only seven days. It is his last letter. The words of hope and faith are the last we are to hear from him. With it his correspondence ends; and his prison doors, except for such casual rumours as may yet escape them, will shut against us for ever. What remains of the story of his imprisonment, up to its very close, must be matter of mere doubt and conjecture. But at least the certainty conveyed in these solemn yet joyful answers to Hampden, cannot pass away. What further cruelties or wrongs have to be endured by Eliot, will never be known to us; but ever, out of the darkness and silence, will arise and be audible to the last, not complaining or sorrow, but only this martyr-song of thankfulness and praise" (ii. 719). I know not whether James 1st as the murderer of RALEIGH, or Charles 1st as the murderer of ELIOT, most deserves our execration. It is an "old, old story." May it never be forgotten! for only by keeping it in remembrance will the "great price" of our irrevocable civil and religious liberties and privileges as a nation, be realized.



NOTES.

- Page 4, l. 16, '*affection*' = affecting or esteeming.
5, l. 11 '*prevention*' = anticipation. See on page
156, l. 11, and p. 201, l. 17.
7, l. 4, '*misconter*' = misconstrue.
12, l. 6, '*unanswerable*' = non-answerable, or non-
corresponding. Cf. p. 54, l. 21 : last l.
'refractoryes' = refractories.
13, l. 2, '*spangells*' = gew-gaws ! l. 13 '*hence farr*'
= thus far.
14, l. 16, '*Fleet*'—At Port Eliot is preserved a con-
temporary MS. Diary of the movements
and transactions of this notorious, rather
than famous, '*Fleet*.' I am preparing it
for the Camden Society. It will be an
extremely interesting commentary on

II.

H H

much of the speaking, writing, and action of Sir John Eliot and others, as revealed in *Negotium Posterorum*, and indeed in nearly the whole of these volumes. This MS. belonged to Sir John Eliot, and was also entrusted to me by the late Earl St. Germans.

Page 17, l. 19, 'deduce' = lead or draw.

18, l. 4, 'expose' = show, disclose. Cf. p. 21, l. 17.

21, l. 11, 'resente' = take well.

24, l. 10, 'debetie' = deputy: l. 17, 'aposer' = opposers.

31, l. 9, 'apologie' = defence.

42, l. 6, 'pretence' = design—as in Elizabethan writers (Greene, etc.): l. 10 Chrān = Christian.

48, l. 9, 'man date' = mandate.

50, l. 17, 'adventure' = venture, hazard

52, l. 18, 'admiration' = wonder: l. 21, 'one' = on, *ut frequenter* and 'on' = one.

54, l. 20, 'retribution' = compensation *ut frequenter*.

56, l. 5, 'deduce'—see on p. 17, l. 19.

57, l. 12, 'censure' = judgment.

59, l. 1, 'touches' = touchstones.

60, l. 8, 'incompatible,' and p. 63 l. 14 = inconsistent.

71, l. 9, 'beholding' = obligated.

83, l. 2, read 'ay,' not as the martyr-king.

Page 131, l. 25, '*besides*' = beside—and so sometimes for our 'sometime.'

135, l. 1, '*Quixote*'—So Sir John Eliot had read the great Spaniard's great book: l. 5, '*wandering Jew*' = the well-known myth or legend, as re-told recently by Moncurr Conway: l. 12 '*pale*' = paling or enclosure.

136, l. 7, '*period*' = conclusion.

137, l. 7, '*viall*' = vial, as in Book of Revelation.

138, l. 17, '*virtue*' = manhood (said of Selden).

139, l. 6, '*intention*' = attention. Cf. p. 141, ll. 25, 29.

151, l. 18, '*p'uencon*' = anticipation, as before.

156, l. 11, '*preuent*' = anticipate.

158, l. 6, '*heard*' = herd.

166, l. 12, '*censure*' = judge, as before.

173, l. 21, '*Thorough*' = true, firm: l. 22, '*Hund*' = hundred. See context.

178, l. 22, '*aspect*' = astrological term.

181, l. 2, '*riding*'—to be noted.

183, l. 4, '*practise*' = evil design: l. 16, '*proprietie*' = property.

184, l. 10, '*censure*'—as on p. 57, l. 12.

185, l. 11, '*the fauoritt*' = Buckingham: l. 24, '*insults*' = triumphs, boasts.

187, l. 6, '*minte*.' See page 197, l. 10 onward and p. 199.

Page 189, l. 4, '*my thinks*' = transition form of '*me-thinks*.'

201, l. 17, '*prevented*' = anticipated.

227, l. 24, '*covenable*' = collusive (in a good sense).

A. B. G.

END OF VOL. II.

FINIS.

CHISWICK PRESS:—C. WHITTINGHAM AND CO., TOOKS COURT, CHANCERY LANE.

Acme
Bookbinding Co., Inc.
300 Summer Street
Boston, Mass. 02210

The borrower must return this item on or before the last date stamped below. If another user places a recall for this item, the borrower will be notified of the need for an earlier return.

Non-receipt of overdue notices does not exempt the borrower from overdue fines.

Harvard College Widener Library
Cambridge, MA 02138 617-495-2413



Please handle with care.
Thank you for helping to preserve
library collections at Harvard.

